

PERSISTENCE AND AGGRESSION IN *DROSOPHILA MELANOGASTER*

THE ROLES OF MALE PERSISTENCE AND AGGRESSION IN MALE-MALE AND
MALE-FEMALE INTERACTIONS IN *DROSOPHILA MELANOGASTER*

By CARLING M. BAXTER, B.Sc.

A Thesis Submitted to the School of Graduate Studies in Partial Fulfilment of the
Requirements for the Degree Doctor of Philosophy

McMaster University © Copyright by Carling M. Baxter, September 2019

McMaster University DOCTOR OF PHILOSOPHY (2019) Hamilton, Ontario.
Department of Psychology, Neuroscience & Behaviour

TITLE: The roles of male persistence and aggression in male-male and male-female interactions in *Drosophila melanogaster*

AUTHOR: Carling M. Baxter, B.Sc. (McMaster University)

SUPERVISOR: Dr. Reuven Dukas

NUMBER OF PAGES: xiv, 168

LAY ABSTRACT

All animals face obstacles from their environment that they must respond to in order to survive and reproduce. In this thesis, I focused on how males use aggressive and persistent behaviours to overcome environmental obstacles. Aggression is the use of physical force against another individual, and persistence is when an individual continues in a course of action despite difficulties. I used fruit flies as a model to examine how males fight with one another over access to food and potential mates. I also studied how males persistently harass females in order to mate with them. In many experiments, I found that males use a combination of aggressive and persistent behaviours to achieve a goal. Overall, my results show that even in a simple species like fruit flies, individuals can use complex combinations of behaviours to achieve a variety of goals.

ABSTRACT

All animals face a complex environment full of obstacles that they must overcome in order to survive and reproduce. How an individual responds to its environment is essential to overcoming such obstacles in order to maximize fitness. In my thesis, I focused on the roles of persistence and aggression in achieving fitness-relevant goals. Persistence is continuing in a course of action in spite of difficulty or resistance, and aggression is any instance where an individual uses physical, and potentially damaging, force against a conspecific. I used fruit flies (*Drosophila melanogaster*) as a model system to examine the ways in which males use persistence and aggression to attain fitness-relevant goals such as defending resources, gaining access to females, and mating. I first examined how a male's age affected his persistence in courting recently mated females, who are generally unreceptive, and found that older males were more persistent than younger males (Chapter 2). Next, I showed that males of different ages differed in their courtship persistence in the presence of a competitor, and that males were able to subtly, but directly, interfere with one another's courtship attempts (Chapter 3). I then demonstrated how males were able to use aggression in a mate guarding context to reduce the likelihood that a competitor male mated with their recent mate (Chapter 4), and as a form of resource defense to defend a desirable food patch in the presence of a potential mate (Chapter 5). Finally, I considered male persistence in the pursuit of unreceptive females as a form of male sexual aggression towards recently mated and sexually immature females (Chapters 5 and 6). Overall, my thesis work demonstrates how complex, and sometimes intertwined, the roles of persistence, aggression, and sexual coercion can be even within a 'simple' model organism, such as the fruit fly.

ACKNOWLEDGEMENTS

First, I would like to thank my supervisor, Reuven Dukas, for his guidance throughout my time as a member of his lab, as well as my other committee members, Ian Dworkin and Paul Andrews, for their support and advice during my graduate studies. Next, I extend my gratitude to all of the undergraduate students I have worked with throughout my degree. None of the research in this thesis would have been possible without all of your contributions. Finally, I would like to thank my friends and family for all of the encouragement and kindness they have shown me throughout the years.

TABLE OF CONTENTS

<i>ABSTRACT</i>	<i>iv</i>
<i>ACKNOWLEDGEMENTS</i>	<i>v</i>
<i>TABLE OF CONTENTS</i>	<i>vi</i>
<i>LIST OF FIGURES</i>	<i>xi</i>
CHAPTER 1 – INTRODUCTION	1
1.1 General introduction	1
1.2 Persistence	2
1.3 Aggression	6
1.4 Structure of the thesis	8
1.5 References	10
CHAPTER 2 – EFFECTS OF AGE AND EXPERIENCE ON MALE MATE CHOOSINESS	13
2.1 Abstract	13
2.2 Introduction	14
2.3 General methods	16
2.4 Effects of male age on conspecific mate choosiness	17
2.4.1 Methods.....	18
2.4.2 Results.....	18
2.5 Males’ mate choosiness from age one to seven days	21
2.5.1 Methods.....	21
2.5.2 Results.....	21
2.6 Effects of female deprivation on male mate choosiness	23
2.6.1 Methods.....	23
2.6.2 Results.....	23
2.7 Females responses to courtship by young versus mature males	25
2.7.1 Methods.....	25
2.7.2 Results.....	26
2.8 Attractiveness to females of young and mature males	26
2.8.1 Methods.....	26
2.8.2 Results.....	27

2.9 Competitive ability of young and mature males	29
2.9.1 Methods.....	29
2.9.2 Results.....	29
2.10 Fertility of young and mature males	31
2.10.1 Methods.....	31
2.10.2 Results.....	31
2.11 Fertility of mature males that have either encountered or been deprived of females.....	34
2.11.1 Methods.....	34
2.11.2 Results.....	34
2.12 Discussion.....	36
2.13 Acknowledgements	39
2.14 References	40
<i>CHAPTER 3 – MATING SUCCESS IN FRUIT FLIES: COURTSHIP INTERFERENCE VERSUS FEMALE CHOICE.....</i>	<i>44</i>
3.1 Abstract.....	44
3.2 Introduction.....	45
3.3 General methods	47
3.4 Male size, courtship interference and mating success	48
3.4.1 Courtship interference - Methods	50
3.4.2 Courtship interference - Results.....	52
3.4.3 Mating success in choice vs. no-choice trials - Methods.....	54
3.4.4 Mating success in choice vs. no-choice trials - Results	54
3.5 Male age, courtship interference and mating success.....	56
3.5.1 Courtship interference - Methods	58
3.5.2 Courtship interference – Results.....	58
3.5.3 Mating success in choice vs. no-choice trials - Methods.....	60
3.5.4 Mating success in choice vs. no-choice trials - Results	60
3.6 True-choice vs. classical choice.....	62
3.6.1 Methods.....	62
3.6.2 Results.....	64

3.7 Discussion.....	66
3.8 Acknowledgments	69
3.9 References	70
<i>CHAPTER 4 – AGGRESSION, MATE GUARDING, AND FITNESS IN MALE FRUIT FLIES.....</i>	73
4.1 Abstract.....	73
4.2 Introduction.....	74
4.3 General methods	76
4.4 Aggression in the context of mate guarding	77
4.4.1 Methods.....	77
4.4.2 Results.....	79
4.5 Aggression by mate guards vs. mated males	81
4.5.1 Methods.....	81
4.5.2 Results.....	83
4.6 Fitness benefit of mate guarding	86
4.6.1 Methods.....	86
4.6.2 Results.....	87
4.7 Discussion.....	91
4.8 Acknowledgements	93
4.9 References	94
<i>CHAPTER 5 – LIFE HISTORY OF AGGRESSION: EFFECTS OF AGE AND SEXUAL EXPERIENCE ON MALE AGGRESSION TOWARDS MALES AND FEMALES.....</i>	97
5.1 Abstract.....	97
5.2 Introduction.....	98
5.3 Methods.....	101
5.3.1 General	101
5.3.2 Effects of age on aggression	102
5.3.3 Effects of mating experience on aggression	103
5.3.4 Resource defence	103
5.3.5 Forced copulation with teneral females	105

5.3.6 Coercive mating with recently mated females	105
5.4 Results	109
5.4.1 Effects of age on aggression	109
5.4.2 Effects of mating experience on aggression	115
5.5 Discussion.....	119
5.5.1 Effects of age on aggression	120
5.5.2 Effects of sexual experience on aggression	121
5.5.3 Conclusions.....	123
5.6 Acknowledgments	123
5.7 References	124
<i>CHAPTER 6 – GENETIC VARIATION IN SEXUAL AGGRESSION AND THE FACTORS THAT DETERMINE FORCED COPULATION SUCCESS.....</i>	<i>128</i>
6.1 Abstract.....	128
6.2 Introduction.....	129
6.3 General methods	132
6.4 Genetic variation in forced copulation success	133
6.4.1 Methods.....	133
6.4.2 Statistical Analyses	134
6.4.3 Results.....	134
6.5 Determinants of forced copulation success of ‘low’ and ‘high’ hybrid genotypes	136
6.5.1 Methods.....	136
6.5.2 Statistical Analyses	137
6.5.3 Results.....	138
6.6 Mating success of ‘low’ and ‘high’ hybrid genotypes with mature virgin females	142
6.6.1 Methods.....	142
6.6.2 Statistical Analyses	142
6.6.3 Results.....	142
6.7 Discussion.....	144
6.8 Acknowledgements	148

6.9 References	149
<i>CHAPTER 7 – DISCUSSION</i>.....	153
7.1 Overview	153
7.2 The role of persistence	153
7.3 The role of aggression	157
7.4 Future directions	160
7.5 Conclusion	163
7.6 References	165

LIST OF FIGURES

Figure 2.1	20
Figure 2.2	20
Figure 2.3	22
Figure 2.4	24
Figure 2.5	28
Figure 2.6	30
Figure 2.7	33
Figure 2.8	35
Figure 3.1	49
Figure 3.2	49
Figure 3.3	53
Figure 3.4	53
Figure 3.5	55
Figure 3.6	57
Figure 3.7	59
Figure 3.8	59
Figure 3.9	61
Figure 3.10	65
Figure 3.11	65
Figure 4.1	78
Figure 4.2	80
Figure 4.3	82
Figure 4.4	82
Figure 4.5	84
Figure 4.6	84
Figure 4.7	85
Figure 4.8	85
Figure 4.9	88
Figure 4.10	88
Figure 4.11	89
Figure 4.12	89
Figure 4.13	90
Figure 5.1	111
Figure 5.2	111
Figure 5.3	112
Figure 5.4	112
Figure 5.5	113
Figure 5.6	113
Figure 5.7	114
Figure 5.8	114
Figure 5.9	116
Figure 5.10	116
Figure 5.11	117

Figure 5.12	117
Figure 5.13	118
Figure 6.1	135
Figure 6.2	139
Figure 6.3	140
Figure 6.4	141
Figure 6.5	141
Figure 6.6	143

DECLARATION OF ACADEMIC ACHIEVEMENT

This dissertation is organized in the sandwich thesis format as approved by McMaster University. It consists of seven chapters. **Chapter 1** provides an introduction to the thesis as well as a brief overview of the data chapters. **Chapters 2 to 5** are published manuscripts and **Chapter 6** is a submitted manuscript which has been accepted for publication. **Chapter 7** discusses the results of the data chapters and how they are connected to one another through the themes of aggression and persistence.

CHAPTER 1 – Introduction

Author: Carling M. Baxter

CHAPTER 2 – Effects of age and experience on male mate choosiness

Authors: Carling M. Baxter, Rachael Barnett and Reuven Dukas

Publication: Ethology, 121: 353–363 (2015)

Comments: C.M.B. and R.D. conceived this study. C.M.B. and R.B. performed the experiments. C.M.B. analyzed the data and C.M.B. and R.D. wrote the manuscript.

CHAPTER 3 – Mating success in fruit flies: courtship interference versus female choice

Authors: Carling M. Baxter, Joseph Mentlik, Ieta Shams and Reuven Dukas

Publication: Animal Behaviour 138: 101-108 (2018)

Comments: C.M.B., J.M. and R.D. conceived this study. C.M.B., J.M. and I.S. performed the experiments. C.M.B. and J.M. analyzed the data and C.M.B., J.M. and R.D. wrote the manuscript.

CHAPTER 4 – Aggression, mate guarding, and fitness in male fruit flies

Authors: Carling M. Baxter, Rachael Barnett and Reuven Dukas

Publication: Animal Behaviour 109: 235-241

Comments: C.M.B. and R.D. conceived this study. C.M.B. and R.B. performed the experiments. C.M.B. analyzed the data and C.M.B. and R.D. wrote the manuscript.

CHAPTER 5 – Life history of aggression: Effects of age and sexual experience on male aggression towards males and females

Authors: Carling M. Baxter and Reuven Dukas

Publication: Animal Behaviour 123: 11-20 (2017)

Comments: C.M.B. and R.D. conceived this study. C.M.B. performed the experiments and analyzed the data. C.M.B. and R.D. wrote the manuscript.

CHAPTER 6 – Genetic variation in sexual aggression and the factors that determine forced copulation success

Authors: Carling M. Baxter, Janice L. Yan and Reuven Dukas

Publication: Animal Behaviour (in press)

Comments: C.M.B. and R.D. conceived this study. C.M.B. and J.L.Y. performed the experiments. C.M.B. analyzed the data. C.M.B. wrote the manuscript with input from R.D.

CHAPTER 7 – Discussion

Author: Carling M. Baxter

1

2

CHAPTER 1 – INTRODUCTION

3

4 **1.1 General introduction**

5

6 Anyone who works closely with animals of a given species will likely notice that there is
7 variation in the behaviour of the individuals that they work with. However, there is of
8 course a lot of consistency in behaviour across individuals as well. This is because traits
9 that maximize fitness are more likely to persist across generations (provided they are
10 heritable). On the level of an individual, its optimal course of action is one that will
11 maximize its fitness, either directly or indirectly. Even individuals of relatively ‘simple’
12 species face a variety of challenges they must work through in order to maximize their
13 fitness. For example, in nematodes (*Caenorhabditis elegans*), individuals must be able to
14 seek out food based on a variety of chemosensory cues in their environment. When faced
15 with varying qualities of food individuals can even choose to stay at a food site or leave it
16 based on its quality relative to what they have experienced before (Borisovich Shtonda &
17 Avery, 2006). The ability of animals to modify their behaviour based on their prior
18 experiences and current circumstances is important to being able to act optimally in a
19 variable environment.

20 Behavioural patterns are flexible, and there can often be multiple ways in which an
21 individual could face the same challenge or overcome the same obstacle. For example,
22 meerkats (*Surikata surikatta*) consume a variety of different prey items, each with their
23 own distinct handling needs (Doolan & Macdonald, 1996). One potentially dangerous prey
24 type that is available to meerkats year-round is scorpions (genera *Parabuthus* and
25 *Opisthophthalmus*). Meerkats must handle scorpions carefully, and such handling can be
26 time consuming and requires practice (Thornton & McAuliffe, 2006). If, for example, a
27 meerkat is faced with a particularly difficult-to-dismantle scorpion it may persist in
28 attempting to dismantle it until it is successful, whereas a different meerkat may simply
29 abandon it and search for a simpler prey to deal with. Alternatively, a more dominant

30 individual may forgo the hunting and handling stages entirely and simply use aggression to
31 steal pre-handled food from others (e.g. Thornton & Samson, 2012). The end goal in each
32 of these situations is the same: to eat. However, the behavioural patterns performed to reach
33 that goal are distinct. In the first instance the individual persisted in a course of action
34 despite difficulty, in the second it abandoned the course of action to pursue alternatives,
35 and in the third it used aggression against a conspecific to bypass the difficult handling.
36 From this example it's clear how persistence and aggression are both ways in which an
37 individual can attempt to overcome obstacles in order to reach a goal.

38 It is important to note that both persistence and aggression are not behaviours
39 themselves, but ways in which an individual can utilize behavioural patterns. There can be
40 overlap in behaviours that are categorized as persistent or aggressive, and they can be used
41 to reach the same types of goals, but they are distinct concepts, so I will expand on each
42 separately below.

43

44 **1.2 Persistence**

45

46 Persistence can be defined as the continuation in a course of action in spite of difficulty or
47 resistance. This can be difficulty in overcoming environmental obstacles, such as during
48 foraging (e.g. Grieg-Smith, 1987) or in overcoming resistance by a conspecific, such as
49 during courtship of unreceptive females (e.g. Las, 1980; Marshall, 1982). The key for an
50 individual is to find an optimal balance between persisting in a course of action or
51 abandoning it to pursue alternatives. This optimum can be thought of as the duration of
52 persistence in a course of action that will maximize an individual's fitness gain per unit of
53 effort invested; where gain is equal to the probability of success multiplied by the benefit
54 given it succeeds, and effort invested is the time taken to encounter this item or individual
55 plus the time and energy put into handling or persisting (combined ideas from Greig-Smith
56 (1987) and Parker (1974)). This model assumes an individual knows something about the
57 encounter rate in its environment as well as the variation in quality of the items it will
58 encounter. If many alternatives are readily available, then persisting for a long duration

59 may not be beneficial. However, if the encounter rate with such items is rare, then persisting
60 for long durations, in spite of difficulty or resistance, is likely the optimal course of action.
61 If the environment is constant, then an individual can use the same rule for how persistent
62 to be in particular situations. However, if aspects of the environment change over time, then
63 individuals who are able to adjust their persistence based on their prior experience or
64 environmental cues will be better able to maximize their fitness. In the case of foraging,
65 Greig-Smith (1987) found that bullfinches (*Pyrrhula pyrrhula*) seem to take into
66 consideration the abundance and variation in quality of seeds in their environment when
67 deciding whether to persist in handling difficult-to-open seeds versus abandoning them to
68 search for new seeds. This implies that bullfinches are altering their persistence based on
69 their prior experience with the seeds in the environment that they are currently foraging in.
70 The general ‘rules’ of weighing the costs and benefits of persisting in a course of action
71 can be applied across a variety of different challenges an individual may face.

72 In an environment that frequently changes, individuals may be faced with problems
73 that are entirely novel to them. The ability to solve novel problems could help individuals
74 access food in a newly urbanized environment, for example. Although one may at first
75 expect aspects of intelligence to be fundamental to problem solving, a recent computational
76 model predicted that persistence was more important than learning for novel problem
77 solving (Guez & Griffin, 2016). The importance of persistence in problem solving has been
78 supported empirically as well. When groups of wild meerkats were presented with novel
79 ‘problem boxes’ to open, it was not the first individuals to approach the apparatus, nor the
80 most dominant individuals who solved them, but simply the individuals who spent the most
81 time attempting to open them (Thornton & Samson, 2012). In other words, the most
82 persistent individuals were the ones most likely to solve the problem. A similar result was
83 found in Indian mynas (*Sturnus tristis*), where the individuals who made the most attempts
84 to open the novel problem box were more likely to succeed (Griffin, Diquelou, & Perea,
85 2014). Therefore, persistence may play an important role in overcoming novel problems
86 across a variety of different species.

87 An important goal for any sexually reproducing individual is to reproduce with an
88 appropriate mate. However, determining whether a potential mate is appropriate depends
89 on the relative fitness an individual would gain from mating with them and the likelihood
90 that mating will occur (either through acceptance, coercion or force). For males, who often
91 have to locate and court potential mates, the decision to begin courting and persist in
92 courting a given female depends on a variety of factors. Males seeking mating opportunities
93 can optimize their fitness by modifying their level of persistence in the pursuit of a given
94 female based on the encounter rate with females of varying receptivity levels. This parallels
95 the bullfinch foraging example above, where individuals modified their persistence in
96 attempting to open a given seed based on their encounter rate with various types of seeds
97 (Parker, 1974). While studying male pursuit tactics in salticid spiders (*Phidippus johnsoni*),
98 Jackson (1978) found that males modify their degree of persistence in courting females
99 based on whether they find the female inside or outside of her nest. When a female is found
100 inside her nest, she is more reluctant to mate and seems to require a longer duration of
101 courtship before accepting a mate. He compares the tactics of males pursuing different
102 ‘types’ of females to the way predators pursue different prey items that vary in encounter
103 rate and handling time. More recently, Louâpre et al. (2015) have formally compared
104 models of optimal foraging to male mate search and suggest that applying ideas from
105 optimal foraging theory to male mate search will allow researchers to better understand
106 male mate choice behaviours. Given the role of persistence in optimal foraging has been
107 well established, applying these models to male mate search may shed further light on the
108 role of persistence in male mate choosiness.

109 The ability of males to modify their level of persistence in pursuing a given female,
110 versus abandoning pursuit to search for other females, has also been documented in
111 greenhouse whiteflies (*Trialeurodes vaporariorum*, Las, 1980), orange tip butterflies
112 (*Anthocharis cardamines*, Wiklund & Forsberg, 1986) and common pierid butterflies
113 (*Colias philodice* and *C. eurytheme*, Marshall, 1982). In pierid butterflies, males modify
114 their level of courtship persistence throughout the day based on the fact that there is
115 generally a greater proportion of recently eclosed, unmated females available in the early

116 mornings compared to later in the day (Marshall, 1982). If a male encounters an unreceptive
117 female in the early morning, he will quickly abandon courting her and search for another
118 female since virgin females are relatively abundant. Whereas in the afternoon, when
119 encountering a virgin female is less likely, males will persist in courting initially
120 unreceptive females for longer durations before either eventually succeeding in mating or
121 abandoning courtship to search for other females. This temporal variation in a male's
122 courtship persistence allows males to modify their reproductive efforts and maximize their
123 potential fitness.

124 I previously described the 'appropriateness' of a mate as depending on the fitness
125 gain an individual will receive by mating with them, combined with the likelihood that
126 mating will occur. However, this appropriateness can differ for males and females, namely
127 within a pair of individuals a male may benefit by pursuing and mating with a particular
128 female, while she suffers a cost from being pursued by and/or mating with that male.
129 Because the optimum for males and females often differs, it generates conflict between the
130 sexes. Optimal mating rates are often higher for males than for females (e.g. Bateman,
131 1948; Norton & Uetz, 2005; Rowe, Arnqvist, Sih, & Krupa, 1994) generating conflict over
132 the occurrence of mating, where persistence, by both males and females, can be involved.
133 A female who has recently mated, and still has sperm from her previous mate may have
134 relatively little to gain from mating with another male. Oftentimes, males will persistently
135 harass mated females who resist mating, as seen in water striders (*Gerris* spp, Arnqvist,
136 1992; Rowe et al., 1994), fruit flies (*Drosophila melanogaster*, Byrne, Rice, & Rice, 2008;
137 Wigby & Chapman, 2004), elephant seals (*Mirounga angustirostris*, Le Boeuf & Mesnick,
138 1991), and waterfowl (family: Anatidae, Mckinney, Derrickson, & Mineau, 1983;
139 McKinney & Evarts, 1997). Females can also vary how persistently they reject males and
140 whether they accept an unnecessary mating, as seen in water striders (*Gerris* spp, Arnqvist,
141 1992) and West Indian sweet potato weevils (*Euscepes postfasciatus*, Kumano, Kuriwada,
142 Shiromoto, Haraguchi, & Kohama, 2011). If the male's persistent sexual harassment leads
143 to direct physical harm for the female, then it becomes a form of sexual aggression, and

144 can represent one area of overlap between the roles of persistence and aggression in
145 overcoming resistance to achieve mating success.

146

147 **1.3 Aggression**

148

149 Aggression is the use of, or threatened use of, physical and potentially damaging force
150 against a conspecific. As stated above, it is important to remember that aggression is not a
151 single behaviour or even a group of specific behaviours, but rather a broad categorization
152 of a variety of different behaviours that can be performed to achieve distinct goals both
153 within and across species (Moyer, 1968). Although males tend to be the more aggressive
154 sex, in many species both males and females utilize aggression to secure valuable resources.

155 In almost any natural environment access to resources is limited, making conflict
156 over resources essentially unavoidable. As a result, aggressive disputes, or contests, over
157 limited resources are common in nature and in some cases specific weaponry for aggressive
158 contests has evolved (e.g. antlers of male deer (family: Cervidae, Clutton-Brock, 1982)).
159 The presence of such weaponry means that the maximal costs of an aggressive encounter
160 can be very high. Given these potentially high costs, why are aggressive contests relatively
161 common? First, as noted by Maynard Smith and Price (1973), many aggressive contests
162 seem to follow what they refer to as ‘limited war’ strategies, meaning that individuals rarely
163 use lethal actions against their opponent even when those actions would be simple to
164 perform. An example of a ‘limited war’ strategy occurs in western diamondback
165 rattlesnakes (*Crotalus atrox*), where males attempt to wrestle one another into submission,
166 but do not bite their opponent with their venomous fangs (Gillingham, Carpenter, &
167 Murphy, 1983). When computationally modelling different conflict strategies, Maynard
168 Smith and Price (1973) found that strategies where individuals rarely escalate to highly
169 damaging aggressive acts are more evolutionarily stable than strategies where individuals
170 are always highly aggressive or non-aggressive. Therefore, the costs associated with
171 aggressive contests are unlikely to reach their potential maximums. Additionally, a
172 potential benefit of engaging in aggressive contests is that they can inform an individual

173 about the strength of their competitor. This can allow individuals to make a more informed
174 decision about whether the value of the resource outweighs the potential cost of fighting a
175 given competitor, based on the relative strength asymmetry between themselves and their
176 competitor (Enquist & Leimar, 1983). This idea of mutual-assessment by fighting males
177 has been supported by work in the bowl and doily spider (*Frontinella pyramitela*), where
178 males who are fighting over access to females seem to adjust their persistence in fighting
179 based on the relative strength of themselves compared to their competitor (Leimar, Austad,
180 & Enquist, 1991). Therefore, the use of aggression in conflicts over limited resources has
181 many potential benefits, and the costs of aggression rarely escalate to their potential
182 maximums.

183 Since aggression can take on many forms, and manifest through many distinct
184 actions, it is reasonable to categorize aggressive acts based on their function. As stated
185 above, aggression is often used in contests over access to limited resources. However, it
186 can also be used by both males and females to protect prior reproductive investments.
187 Females, who typically invest more in each offspring than do males (Trivers, 1972), may
188 protect their investments by showing maternal aggression, where a mother aggressively
189 defends her offspring (Gammie, Hasen, Rhodes, Girard, & Garland, 2003; Maestripieri,
190 1992; St. John & Corning, 1973). In the absence of paternal care, males can also protect
191 their reproductive investments by guarding their mates from other males. In Idaho ground
192 squirrels (*Urocitellus brunneus*), after mating a male will stay close to his mate for the
193 remainder of her oestrus stage which lasts a few hours (Sherman, 1989). During this time
194 the guarding male will attack any intruder male who approaches the female. If no guard is
195 present, females will often mate with, and produce offspring by, multiple males. Therefore,
196 there is a measurable benefit to a male's paternity success from aggressively guarding his
197 mate. Mate guarding can, of course, be costly, as demonstrated in Seychelles warblers
198 (*Acrocephalus sechellensis*), where guarding males spend less time foraging, and as a result
199 are in poorer body condition, than males who are not guarding their mate (Komdeur, 2001).
200 However, these males appear to weigh the costs and benefits of guarding their mates, as
201 they guard females less intensely (and forage more frequently) when there are fewer

202 competitor males nearby. Therefore, there are many circumstances where both males and
203 females can benefit from using aggression to protect their reproductive investments.

204 Prior to mating, males can also use aggression to increase their likelihood of mating
205 either directly or indirectly. Male fruit flies (*Drosophila melanogaster*) are known to fight
206 over food resources that are attractive to females (Chen, Lee, Bowens, Huber, & Kravitz,
207 2002; Hoffmann, 1987; Hoffmann & Cacoyianni, 1990; Lim, Eyjólfsdóttir, Shin, Perona,
208 & Anderson, 2014) and this resource defense can lead to increased mating success (Dow
209 & Schilcher, 1976; Hoffmann & Cacoyianni, 1989). Males can also defend large territories
210 in order to have primary mating access to the females that live within those territories, as
211 seen in Lake Eyre dragons (*Ctenophorus maculosus*, Olsson, 1995b). Male Lake Eyre
212 dragons not only use aggression against other males in territorial disputes, but they also use
213 sexual aggression directly towards females to coerce them into mating (McLean, Chan,
214 Dickerson, Moussalli, & Stuart-Fox, 2016; Olsson, 1995a), thus demonstrating how males
215 can utilize aggressive behaviours under a variety of situations to increase their reproductive
216 success.

217 As with persistence, the key to an individual's success is finding the optimal balance
218 between being aggressive or being complacent under a variety of circumstances. Decisions
219 regarding an individual's aggression are not binary; one can choose to vary the intensity
220 and duration that they will engage in aggressive contests based on many factors. Therefore,
221 it can often be informative to measure an individual's persistence in aggressive behaviours,
222 rather than simply the presence or absence of an aggressive response to a given situation.

223

224 **1.4 Structure of the thesis**

225

226 In this section I will briefly outline the chapters of my thesis and introduce how they relate
227 to the overarching themes of persistence and aggression.

228

229 When I began my graduate studies, my initial goal was to gain a better
230 understanding of male mate choosiness. Specifically, I was interested in how factors such

231 as age and previous experience can affect how discriminating a male will be if presented
232 with females of varying reproductive value. To do this I used fruit flies (*Drosophila*
233 *melanogaster*) as my model organism (note: many advantages of using fruit flies as a model
234 system are given in Chapters 2-6, so for the sake of conciseness I do not repeat them here).
235 With this goal in mind, we designed a series of experiments comparing the courtship
236 choosiness of males of distinct age groups (Chapter 2). We found that older males spent
237 more time pursuing unreceptive, recently mated females, who perform a variety of rejection
238 signals, than were younger males. Although this result can be interpreted as a lack of
239 choosiness on the part of older males, it can also be interpreted through the lens of
240 persistence: older males were highly persistent in courting recently mated females in spite
241 of resistance. While performing these experiments, we also found that some males were
242 more persistent in their courtship in the presence of a competitor and noted informally that
243 males may have been interfering with one another's courtship attempts. It was these
244 observations that began my shift in focus away from choosiness towards persistence and
245 eventually to aggression.

246 We directly followed-up on the observation of persistence in the presence of a
247 competitor and potential male-male interference and expanded on them in Chapter 3, where
248 we quantified males' subtly aggressive interruptions of one another's courtship and tested
249 whether this male-male interference affected mating success. In Chapter 4 we examined a
250 more overt expression of aggression against competitors by measuring how males alter
251 their aggression levels in the presence of their recent mates, and how this may affect their
252 reproductive success. Finally, we considered male persistence in pursuit of unreceptive
253 females as a form of male sexual aggression (via coercion and forced copulation) in
254 Chapters 5 and 6.

255

256 **1.5 References**

257

258 Arnqvist, G. (1992). Pre-copulatory fighting in a water strider: inter-sexual conflict or mate
259 assessment? *Animal Behaviour*, 43(4), 559–567. [https://doi.org/10.1016/S0003-](https://doi.org/10.1016/S0003-3472(05)81016-4)
260 3472(05)81016-4

261 Bateman, A. J. (1948). Intra-sexual selection in *Drosophila*. *Heredity*, 2, 349–368.

262 Borisovich Shtonda, B., & Avery, L. (2006). Dietary choice behavior in *Caenorhabditis*
263 *elegans*. *Journal of Experimental Biology*, 209, 89–102.
264 <https://doi.org/10.2217/nnm.12.167>.Gene

265 Byrne, P. G., Rice, G. R., & Rice, W. R. (2008). Effect of a refuge from persistent male
266 courtship in the *Drosophila* laboratory environment. *Integrative and Comparative*
267 *Biology*, 48(2), 1–7. <https://doi.org/10.1093/icb/icn001>

268 Chen, S., Lee, A. Y., Bowens, N. M., Huber, R., & Kravitz, E. A. (2002). Fighting fruit
269 flies: a model system for the study of aggression. *Proceedings of the National*
270 *Academy of Sciences of the United States of America*, 99(8), 5664–5668.
271 <https://doi.org/10.1073/pnas.082102599>

272 Clutton-Brock, T. H. (1982). The functions of antlers. *Behaviour*, 79(2), 108–125.
273 <https://doi.org/10.1007/s>

274 Doolan, S. P., & Macdonald, D. W. (1996). Diet and foraging behaviour of group-living
275 meerkats, *Suricata suricatta*, in the southern Kalahari. *Journal of Zoology*, 239(4),
276 697–716. <https://doi.org/10.1111/j.1469-7998.1996.tb05472.x>

277 Dow, M. A., & von Schilcher, F. (1975). Aggression and mating success in *Drosophila*
278 *melanogaster*. *Nature*, 254, 511–512.

279 Enquist, M., & Leimar, O. (1983). Evolution of fighting behaviour: Decision rules and
280 assessment of relative strength. *Journal of Theoretical Biology*, 102(3), 387–410.
281 [https://doi.org/10.1016/0022-5193\(83\)90376-4](https://doi.org/10.1016/0022-5193(83)90376-4)

282 Gammie, S. C., Hasen, N. S., Rhodes, J. S., Girard, I., & Garland, T. (2003). Predatory
283 aggression, but not maternal or intermale aggression, is associated with high voluntary
284 wheel-running behavior in mice. *Hormones and Behavior*, 44(3), 209–221.
285 [https://doi.org/10.1016/S0018-506X\(03\)00140-5](https://doi.org/10.1016/S0018-506X(03)00140-5)

286 Gillingham, J. C., Carpenter, C. C., & Murphy, J. B. (1983). Courtship, male combat and
287 dominance in the western diamondback rattlesnake, *Crotalus atrox*. *Journal of*
288 *Herpetology*, 17(3), 265–270.

289 Greig-Smith, P. W. (1987). Persistence in foraging: When do bullfinches abandon
290 unprofitable seeds? *Behaviour*, 103(1), 203–216.

291 Griffin, A. S., Diquelou, M., & Perea, M. (2014). Innovative problem solving in birds: A
292 key role of motor diversity. *Animal Behaviour*, 92, 221–227.
293 <https://doi.org/10.1016/j.anbehav.2014.04.009>

294 Guez, D., & Griffin, A. S. (2016). Unraveling the key to innovative problem solving: A test
295 of learning versus persistence. *Behavioral Ecology*, 27(5), 1449–1460.
296 <https://doi.org/10.1093/beheco/arw055>

297 Hoffmann, A. A. (1987). A laboratory study of male territoriality in the sibling species
298 *Drosophila melanogaster* and *D. simulans*. *Animal Behaviour*, 35, 807–818.

299 Hoffmann, A. A., & Cacoyianni, Z. (1989). Selection for territoriality in *Drosophila*

- 300 *melanogaster*: correlated responses in mating success and other fitness components.
301 *Animal Behaviour*, 38, 23–34.
- 302 Hoffmann, A. A., & Cacoyianni, Z. (1990). Territoriality in *Drosophila melanogaster* as a
303 conditional strategy. *Animal Behaviour*, 40(3), 526–537.
304 [https://doi.org/10.1016/S0003-3472\(05\)80533-0](https://doi.org/10.1016/S0003-3472(05)80533-0)
- 305 Jackson, R. R. (1978). The mating strategy of *Phidippus johnsoni* (Araneae, Salticidae): I
306 . Pursuit time and persistence. *Behavioral Ecology and Sociobiology*, 4(2), 123–132.
- 307 Komdeur, J. (2001). Mate guarding in the Seychelles warbler is energetically costly and
308 adjusted to paternity risk. *Proceedings of the Royal Society B: Biological Sciences*,
309 268(1481), 2103–2111. <https://doi.org/10.1098/rspb.2001.1750>
- 310 Kumano, N., Kuriwada, T., Shiromoto, K., Haraguchi, D., & Kohama, T. (2011). Intensive
311 resistance by females before copulation induces insemination failure in the West
312 Indian sweet potato weevil *Euscepes postfasciatus*. *Population Ecology*, 53(1), 111–
313 117. <https://doi.org/10.1007/s10144-010-0217-6>
- 314 Las, A. (1980). Male courtship persistence in the Greenhouse Whitefly, *Trialeurodes*
315 *vaporariorum* Westwood (Homoptera: Aleyrodidae). *Behaviour*, 72(1), 107–126.
- 316 Le Boeuf, B. J., & Mesnick, S. (1991). Sexual Behavior of Male Northern Elephant Seals:
317 I. Lethal Injuries To Adult Females. *Behaviour*, 116(1), 143–162.
318 <https://doi.org/10.1163/156853990X00400>
- 319 Leimar, O., Austad, S., & Equist, M. (1991). A test of the sequential assessment game:
320 Fighting in the bowl and doily spider *Frontinella pyramitela*. *Evolution*, 45(4), 862–
321 874. <https://doi.org/10.2307/2409694>
- 322 Lim, R. S., Eyjólfssdóttir, E., Shin, E., Perona, P., & Anderson, D. J. (2014). How food
323 controls aggression in *Drosophila*. *PloS One*, 9(8), e105626.
324 <https://doi.org/10.1371/journal.pone.0105626>
- 325 Louâpre, P., Fauvergue, X., Van Baaren, J., & Martel, V. (2015). The male mate search:
326 An optimal foraging issue? *Current Opinion in Insect Science*, 9, 91–95.
327 <https://doi.org/10.1016/j.cois.2015.02.012>
- 328 Maestripieri, D. (1992). Functional aspects of maternal aggression in mammals. *Canadian*
329 *Journal of Zoology*, 70(6), 1069–1077. <https://doi.org/10.1139/z92-150>
- 330 Marshall, L. (1982). Male courtship persistence in *Colias philodice* and *C. eurytheme*
331 (Lepidoptera: Pieridae). *Journal of the Kansas Entomological Society*, 55(4), 729–
332 736.
- 333 Maynard Smith, J., & Price, G. R. (1973). The Logic of Animal Conflict. *Nature*, 246, 150–
334 018.
- 335 Mckinney, F., Derrickson, S. R., & Mineau, P. (1983). Forced copulation in waterfowl,
336 250–293.
- 337 McKinney, F., & Evarts, S. (1997). Sexual coercion in waterfowl and other birds. In
338 *Ornithological Monographs* (pp. 163–195).
- 339 McLean, C. A., Chan, R., Dickerson, A. L., Moussalli, A., & Stuart-Fox, D. (2016). Social
340 interactions generate mutually reinforcing selection for male aggression in Lake Eyre
341 dragons. *Behavioral Ecology*, 27(4), 1149–1157.
342 <https://doi.org/10.1093/beheco/arw028>
- 343 Moyer, K. E. (1968). Kinds of aggression and their physiological basis. *Communications*

- 344 *in Behavioral Biology*, 2, 65–87.
- 345 Norton, S., & Uetz, G. W. (2005). Mating Frequency in Schizocosa Ocreata (Hentz) Wolf
346 Spiders: Evidence for a Mating System With Female Monandry and Male Polygyny.
347 *Journal of Arachnology*, 33(1), 16–24. <https://doi.org/10.1636/S02-72>
- 348 Olsson, M. (1995a). Forced copulation and costly female resistance behavior in the Lake
349 Eyre Dragon, *Ctenophorus maculosus*. *Herpetologica*, 51(1), 19–24.
- 350 Olsson, M. (1995b). Territoriality in Lake Eyre Dragons *Ctenophorus maculosus*: are
351 Males ‘Superterritorial’? *Ethology*, 101(3), 222–227. [https://doi.org/10.1111/j.1439-](https://doi.org/10.1111/j.1439-0310.1995.tb00360.x)
352 [0310.1995.tb00360.x](https://doi.org/10.1111/j.1439-0310.1995.tb00360.x)
- 353 Parker, G. A. (1974). Courtship persistence and female-guarding as male time investment
354 strategies. *Behaviour*, 48(1), 157–184.
- 355 Rowe, L., Arnqvist, G., Sih, A., & Krupa, J. (1994). Sexual conflict and the evolutionary
356 ecology of mating patterns: water striders as a model system. *Trends in Ecology &*
357 *Evolution*, 9(8), 289–293. [https://doi.org/10.1016/0169-5347\(94\)90032-9](https://doi.org/10.1016/0169-5347(94)90032-9)
- 358 Sherman, P. W. (1989). Mate guarding as paternity insurance in Idaho ground squirrels.
359 *Nature*, 338, 418–420. <https://doi.org/10.1038/340301a0>
- 360 St. John, R. D., & Corning, P. A. (1973). Maternal aggression in mice. *Behavioral Biology*,
361 9, 635–639. [https://doi.org/10.1016/S0091-6773\(73\)80058-6](https://doi.org/10.1016/S0091-6773(73)80058-6)
- 362 Thornton, A., & McAuliffe, K. (2006). Teaching in Wild Meerkats - Supplement. *Science*,
363 313(5784), 227–229. <https://doi.org/10.1126/science.1128727>
- 364 Thornton, A., & Samson, J. (2012). Innovative problem solving in wild meerkats. *Animal*
365 *Behaviour*, 83(6), 1459–1468. <https://doi.org/10.1016/j.anbehav.2012.03.018>
- 366 Trivers, R. L. (1972). Parental investment and sexual selection. In B. Campbell (Ed.),
367 *Sexual selection and the descent of man* (pp. 136–179). Chicago, IL: Aldine
368 Publishing Company.
- 369 Wigby, S., & Chapman, T. (2004). Female Resistance to Male Harm Evolves in Response
370 to Manipulation of Sexual Conflict. *Evolution*, 58(5), 1028–1037.
- 371 Wiklund, C., & Forsberg, J. (1986). Courtship and male discrimination between virgin and
372 mated females in the orange tip butterfly *Anthocharis cardamines*. *Animal Behaviour*,
373 34(2), 328–332. [https://doi.org/10.1016/S0003-3472\(86\)80100-2](https://doi.org/10.1016/S0003-3472(86)80100-2)
- 374

375 **CHAPTER 2 – EFFECTS OF AGE AND EXPERIENCE ON MALE MATE**
376 **CHOOSINESS**

377

378 Baxter, C. M., Barnett, R., & Dukas, R. (2015) Effects of age and experience on male mate
379 choosiness. *Ethology*. *121*: 353–363.

380

381 **2.1 Abstract**

382

383 Mate choosiness by males has been documented in many taxa but we still do not know how
384 it varies with age even though such variation can be important for our understanding of
385 sexual selection on females. Theory provides conflicting predictions: young males, who are
386 less attractive to females than older males, may be less choosy, or older males, who face
387 fewer expected future mating opportunities, may be less choosy. In our experiments with
388 fruit flies (*Drosophila melanogaster*), young (one-day-old) males spent relatively less time
389 courting recently mated females than did mature (four-day-old) males. Overall, there was
390 a gradual decline in male mate choosiness from age one to seven days. Because male age
391 was correlated with the duration of deprivation from females, we tested for the effect of
392 deprivation and found that same-age males previously exposed to females were more
393 choosy than female-deprived males. We also assessed key male parameters that could affect
394 choosiness and found that, compared to mature males, young males were less attractive to
395 females, less competitive in intra-male interactions and less fertile. Although the lesser
396 attractiveness and competitiveness should select for lesser mate choosiness in young males,
397 their limited fertility and more expected future mating opportunities seem to override the
398 other factors and lead to high mate choosiness in young males. Overall, our data indicate
399 that young males just after reaching sexual maturity are choosy, and that subsequent
400 exposure to females can maintain high levels of male mate choosiness with age. Hence
401 males can contribute much more to sexual selection than previously appreciated.

402

403 **Key words:** male mate choice; sexual selection; courtship; fruit flies; *Drosophila*
404 *melanogaster*; age; experience

405

406 **2.2 Introduction**

407

408 It is now well established that male mate choice is prevalent even in species where males
409 provide only sperm (Bonduriansky 2001; Edward & Chapman 2011). Examples include
410 water isopods (*Asellus spp.*) (Manning 1975), Fruit flies (*Drosophila melanogaster*) (Cook
411 & Cook 1975), fowl (*Gallus gallus*) (Pizzari et al. 2003), mice (*Mus musculus domesticus*)
412 (Ramm & Stockley 2014) and monkeys (*Macaca mulatta*) (Herbert 1968). Male mate
413 choice in such species indicates that, even in such taxa, males are sometimes limited by
414 factors other than access to females. Such factors may include time, sperm or seminal fluid,
415 and the mortality costs of courtship and mating (Dewsbury 1982; Schwagmeyer & Parker
416 1990; Van Voorhies 1992; Wedell et al. 2002). Indeed, experiments in a variety of species
417 indicate that courtship is associated with increased mortality rate (Cordts & Partridge 1996;
418 Clutton-Brock & Langley 1997; Kotiaho 2000), that sperm-limited males are more choosy
419 than males with large sperm stores (Byrne & Rice 2006; Long et al. 2009) and that males
420 strategically allocate more sperm to mated, large, attractive and young females than to
421 virgin, small, unattractive or old females, respectively (Wedell et al. 2002; Pizzari et al.
422 2003; Lüpold et al. 2011; Ramm & Stockley 2014).

423 The realization that even males in settings with a highly male-biased operational
424 sex ratio can benefit from exercising choice owing to the costs of courtship and mating
425 paves the way to analyses of the optimal allocation of males' resources to courting and
426 mating based on the expected increments in fitness that mating with a given female can
427 provide (Kokko & Monaghan 2001; Kokko et al. 2006). Indeed research on male mate
428 choice indicates that males often prefer females that are more fertile as indicated by their
429 body size, age and current mating status. Examples include male preference for larger,
430 younger and virgin females in a wide variety of taxa (Bonduriansky 2001; Wedell et al.
431 2002; Edward & Chapman 2011). Another factor that should affect male mate choice is the

432 likelihood of succeeding in mating with a given female, especially in taxa where females
433 accept males only after an extensive period of courtship.

434 In addition to the female characteristics that influence male mate choice, males'
435 optimal investment in mating effort and their level of mate choosiness may vary with their
436 own traits, including relative quality, social status and age. While there has been significant
437 research effort devoted to assessing age-specific allocation of resources to reproduction
438 (Clutton-Brock 1988; Roff 1992; Stearns 1992), much of this work has focused on females.
439 We are not aware of life history models addressing specifically the optimal allocation of
440 resources to reproduction with age in males and it is not obvious to what degree the theory
441 focusing on females is relevant for males. The limited experimental data on mate choice as
442 a function of male age are inconclusive. Martel et al. (2008) reported no effect of age on
443 choosiness in males of the parasitoid wasp *Trichogramma turkestanica* presented with
444 virgin and inseminated females. Two related studies in fruit flies (*D. melanogaster*)
445 documented, first, that there were slightly higher pairings (54% vs 46%) between males
446 and the more fertile out of two available females (Edward & Chapman 2012), and that there
447 was little variation with male age in the potential benefit from mate choice (Edward &
448 Chapman 2013). Finally, in our own work, we found that young, one-day-old male fruit
449 flies (*D. melanogaster*) showed higher levels of mate choosiness than mature, four-day-old
450 males. Specifically, while the young males spent as much time as the mature males
451 pursuing conspecific females, they devoted significantly less time to courting females of
452 the closely related species *D. simulans*. We replicated these findings with two distinct lines
453 of *D. melanogaster*, using a variety of protocols including no-choice and choice setups, and
454 testing inexperienced and experienced males. We suggested that the mature males were
455 less choosy than the young males because they had experienced a longer period of female
456 deprivation prior to the tests (Dukas & Baxter 2014).

457 Our data indicating variation in male mate choosiness with age called for a few
458 follow up experiments. First, the fact that young males were rather selective and mostly
459 avoided courting heterospecific females is highly relevant for research on incipient
460 speciation (Peterson et al. 2005; Servedio & Dukas 2013). To assess the pertinence of our

461 findings for work on sexual selection on females, we wished to quantify male mate
462 choosiness when encountering distinct categories of conspecific females. To this end, we
463 tested how male age influences mate choosiness when encountering either small versus
464 large females, or virgin versus recently mated females. Second, to refine our analysis of
465 male age and mate choosiness, we wished to assess male mate choosiness with age over
466 males' first 7 days of life. This period corresponds to males' realistic expected life span in
467 the field (Rosewell & Shorrocks 1987). Third, we wished to test our deprivation hypothesis,
468 which states that males deprived of females are less choosy than males that encounter
469 females prior to the test (Dukas & Baxter 2014). Fourth, mate choice typically involves
470 two-way interactions between prospective mates and their chooser. In order to focus on
471 male mate choice, we always used females that consistently rejected males. Still there was
472 a slight chance that females responded differently to young and mature males. To test this
473 possibility, we conducted detailed observations quantifying females' responses to courting
474 young and mature males. Finally, to help us explain the observed variation in mate
475 choosiness with age, we wished to quantify relevant parameters in young and mature males.
476 These included attractiveness to females, competitive ability and fertility.

477

478 **2.3 General methods**

479

480 We used wild-type *Drosophila melanogaster* housed in population cages with several
481 hundred flies per cage. The cages were kept in an environmental chamber at 25°C and 60%
482 relative humidity with a 12:12 hour light:dark cycle, with the lights turning on at 10:00 am.
483 Unless stated otherwise, we reared the experimental flies in 240-mL bottles with 50 mL of
484 food and approximately 300 eggs per bottle. The food was a standard fly medium consisting
485 of sucrose, cornmeal, yeast, agar and methyl paraben.

486 We sexed flies within 4 hours of eclosion to ensure virginity. We used gentle
487 aspiration to sex and transfer males individually into food vials, whereas we used CO₂ to
488 sex and place females in groups of 20 per food vial. We did not use CO₂ with the focal
489 males in order to avoid a possible confound owing to different recovery times for young

490 than mature males. Each 40-mL vial contained 5mL of the standard fly medium and the
491 females' vials also contained a dash of live yeast. At the time of testing, mature males and
492 females were 4 days old, young males were 1 day old and virgin females were less than 20
493 hours old and hence sexually immature. Immature virgin females are as sexually attractive
494 to males as are sexually mature virgin females, but they always reject males' advances
495 (Dukas and Dukas 2012). By using immature virgins, we ensured that all females
496 persistently provided males with rejection signals so we could focus on measuring males'
497 willingness to court a given female based on his motivational level and his subjective
498 estimate of his likelihood of mating with that female. Recently mated females were 4-days
499 old and mated with 4-day old males 1–4 hours before being used in the observation phases.
500 In our laboratory, such females rarely remate (Dukas and Dukas 2012). We used small
501 amounts of pink fluorescent powder to mark females in order to allow us to distinguish
502 between the two female types when placed simultaneously in vials. Such marking has no
503 effect on either fly behaviour or attractiveness (Dukas and Baxter 2014). Courtship
504 observation phases were 15 min long, during which observers blind to male age recorded
505 all courtship behaviours.

506 We used generalized estimating equations with gamma distributions and log link
507 functions to analyze the data for which there were repeated measures for each male, and
508 generalized linear models with either gamma or Tweedie distributions with log link
509 functions to analyze the data for which there was only one measure per individual using
510 IBM SPSS (IBM-Corp. 2011). We applied sequential Bonferroni corrections to all post-
511 hoc comparisons.

512

513 **2.4 Effects of male age on conspecific mate choosiness**

514

515 First, we wished to broaden our investigation by examining the effect of male age on
516 choosiness when encountering two conspecific females of distinct qualities. We tested two
517 female qualities, body size (small versus large), which is highly correlated with expected
518 fertility in fruit flies as well as other insects (Robertson 1957; Honěk 1993), and mating

519 status (recently mated versus virgin), which informs males about their likelihood of mating
520 (lower in mated than in virgin females, Dukas (2005a)).

521

522 *2.4.1 Methods*

523 In the first experiment, we tested whether there were age-related differences in
524 males' mate choosiness between small and large females. We placed each male (young or
525 mature) in a vial with one large and one small virgin female and recorded the proportion of
526 time he spent courting each female (n=94 males, half of each age).

527 We obtained small and large females by rearing flies under different densities. We
528 reared small females in high density food vials with approximately 200 eggs per vial
529 containing 1.5mL of the standard fly medium, whereas we reared large females in low
530 density food bottles with about 75 eggs per bottle containing 50mL of the standard fly
531 medium. After testing, we measured the wing length of a random sample of 12 small and
532 12 large females. We removed the right wing of each female, mounted it on a microscope
533 slide and measured the linear distance between the humeral-costal break and the end of the
534 third longitudinal vein (Gilchrist & Partridge 1999). The wings of large females were about
535 45% longer than those of the small females, 2.18 ± 0.02 vs 1.5 ± 0.028 mm, respectively
536 (Wald $\chi^2_1=328$, n=24, $P<0.001$).

537 In the second experiment, we tested for age-related differences in males' choosiness
538 between virgin and recently mated females. We placed males in vials with one female of
539 each type and recorded the proportion of time that males spent courting each female (n=88
540 males, half of each age).

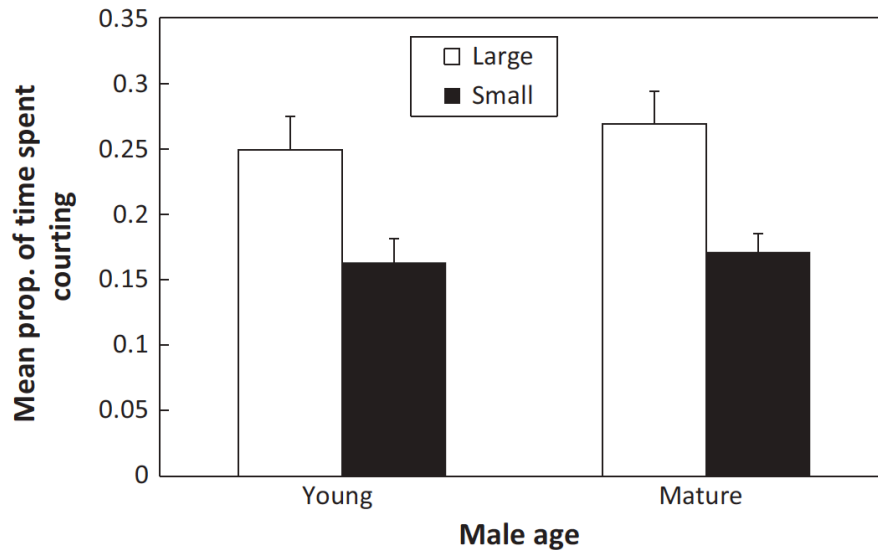
541

542 *2.4.2 Results*

543 When each male encountered one small and one large female simultaneously, there
544 was no interaction between male age and female type (Wald $\chi^2_1=0.05$, n=94, $P=0.8$; Fig.
545 2.1). Both male ages spent more time courting large than small females ($P<0.001$).

546 Males that were presented with both a virgin and recently mated female spent more
547 time courting the former, but there was a significant interaction between male age and

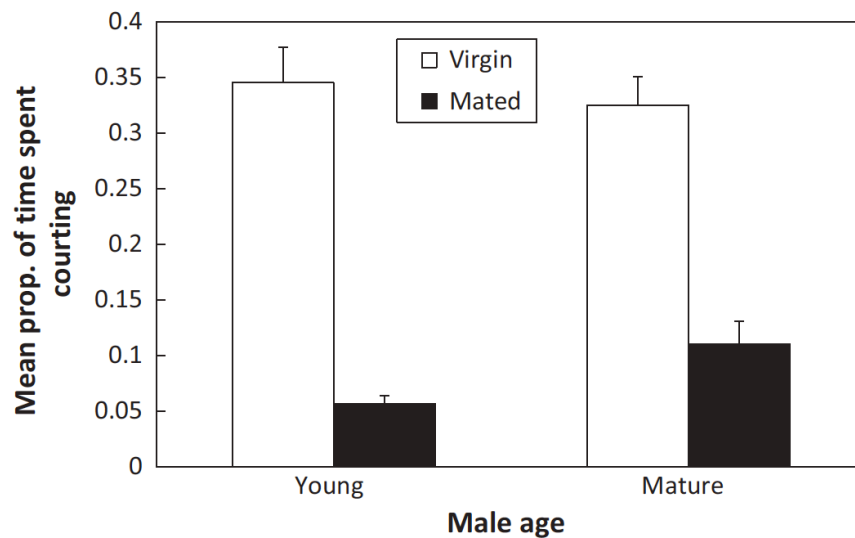
548 female category (Wald $\chi^2_1=6.9$, $n=88$, $P<0.01$; Fig. 2.2). While the young males spent less
549 time courting the recently mated female than did the mature males ($P<0.05$), both male
550 categories spent similar, large proportions of time courting the virgin females ($P=0.6$).



551

552 **Figure 2.1**

553 The proportion of time (mean \pm 1 SE) that young (1-day-old) and mature (4-day-old) males
554 spent courting large and small females (n=47 young and 47 mature males) when presented
555 with one female of each type simultaneously. There was no significant ($P=0.8$) male age
556 by female size interaction.
557



558

559 **Figure 2.2**

560 The proportion of time (mean \pm 1 SE) that young (1-day-old) and mature (4-day-old) males
561 spent courting virgin and mated females (n=44 young and 44 mature males) when presented
562 with one female of each type simultaneously. There was a significant interaction ($P<0.01$)
563 between male age and female mating status.

564 **2.5 Males' mate choosiness from age one to seven days**

565

566 Our previous experiment as well as all the experiments in Dukas and Baxter (2014)
567 compared mate choosiness in one day old versus four day old males. Here we wished to
568 broaden our analysis in order to examine whether there is further decline in mate choosiness
569 in males older than four days but within a realistic age range encountered in the field
570 (Rosewell & Shorrocks 1987). Owing to enormous day and time of day variation, we have
571 to conduct all our comparisons simultaneously and thus focused on males that were 1, 3, 5
572 and 7 days old.

573

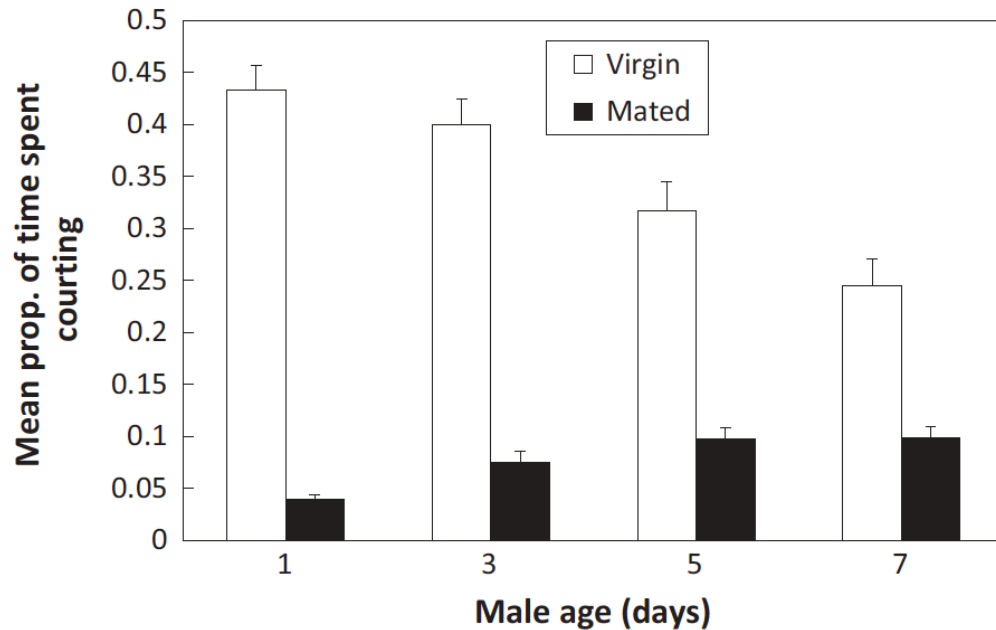
574 *2.5.1 Methods*

575 We tested males that were 1, 3, 5 and 7 days old by placing them with one virgin
576 and one recently mated female ($n=120$ males, 30 of each age) and recorded the proportion
577 of time males spent courting each female.

578

579 *2.5.2 Results*

580 While males of all ages spent more time courting virgin than recently mated
581 females, there was a significant interaction between male age and female type. This was
582 caused by both an increase with male age in the time spent courting recently mated females
583 and a decrease with male age in the time spent courting virgin females (Wald $\chi^2_2=66$,
584 $n=120$, $P<0.001$; Fig. 2.3).



585

586 **Figure 2.3**

587 The proportion of time (mean \pm 1 SE) that males aged 1, 3, 5 and 7 days spent courting
588 virgin and recently mated females when presented with one female of each type
589 simultaneously (n=120 males, 30 of each age). There was a significant interaction
590 ($P < 0.001$) between male age and female mating status.

591 **2.6 Effects of female deprivation on male mate choosiness**

592

593 The standard protocol in mate choice experiments is to sex eclosing adults and keep them
594 in single-sex vials until the test in order to control for their experience and ensure female
595 virginity. Males that encounter no females for a longer period might show lower mate-
596 acceptance criteria and this could explain our observed differences in mate choosiness
597 between young and mature males (Dukas & Baxter 2014). To test for this possibility while
598 controlling for male age, we compared mate choosiness of same-age, mature males that had
599 either encountered and mated with females or encountered no females prior to the test.

600

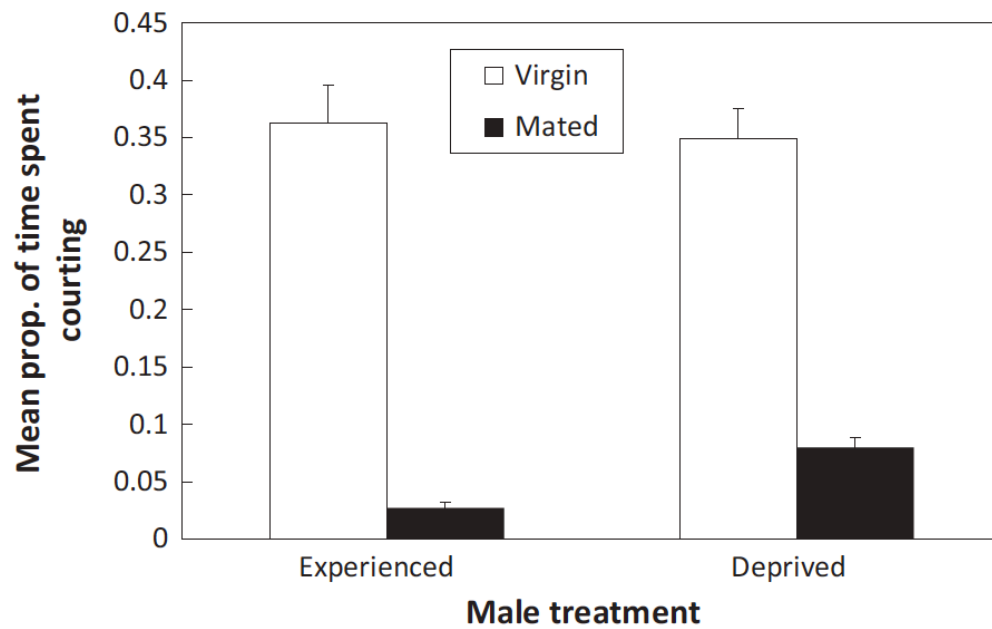
601 *2.6.1 Methods*

602 We randomly assigned males to either a deprived or an experienced treatment
603 group. Deprived males encountered no females prior to the test while experienced males
604 had a mature virgin female added to their vial on days 1, 2 and 3. To simulate realistic
605 settings in which males experience both mature virgin and mated and females, we kept all
606 added females in the vials. We also moved all flies into new food vials on day 3 to ensure
607 the availability of fresh food. On Day 4, we moved the males into test vials with one virgin
608 female and one recently mated female and recorded the proportion of time that the males
609 spent courting each female (n=72 males, half from each treatment).

610

611 *2.6.2 Results*

612 There was a significant interaction between male treatment and female type (Wald
613 $\chi^2_2=21$, n=72, $P<0.001$; Fig. 2.4). Both experienced and deprived males courted virgin
614 females for similar proportions of time ($P=0.75$). However, experienced males courted
615 mated females for significantly less time than deprived males did ($P<0.001$).



616

617 **Figure 2.4**

618 The proportion of time (mean \pm 1 SE) that mature (4-day-old) males experienced with
619 females (n=36) and mature males deprived of females (n=36) spent courting virgin and
620 recently mated females when presented with one female of each type simultaneously. There
621 was a significant interaction ($P < 0.001$) between male age and female mating status.

622 **2.7 Females responses to courtship by young versus mature males**

623

624 Male fruit flies that encounter a female have a variety of cues that can inform them about
625 their likelihood of mating with that female. First, as in many insects, the female's blend of
626 cuticular hydrocarbons contains species- and age-specific information (Jallon 1984;
627 Ferveur 2005; Howard & Blomquist 2005; Everaerts et al. 2010). Second, at least two
628 volatiles provided by males during copulation, cis vaccenyl acetate (cVA) and CH503,
629 mark the female as mated and dramatically reduce that female's attractiveness to males
630 (Brieger & Butterworth 1970; Zawistowski & Richmond 1986; Yew et al. 2009; Ng et al.
631 2014). Finally, if the male initiates courtship, the female's behaviour might provide further
632 information about her receptivity (Spieth 1952; Lasbleiz et al. 2006). Although we used
633 females that rejected males, one might argue that females could vary in their responses
634 towards young and mature males and that this in turn determined the observed difference
635 in male mate choosiness. To assess this possibility, we compared the behavioural responses
636 of mature virgin females to young and mature males.

637

638 *2.7.1 Methods*

639 Our methods were identical to those used in a project dedicated to quantifying
640 female behavioural responses to males, in which we have found significant variation in the
641 behaviour of different female categories towards conspecific and heterospecific males (R.
642 Dukas, unpublished data). We placed 4 sexually mature virgin females about 25 h old inside
643 a 10x10x10 cm Plexiglas cage. The cage contained a cylinder of 5 ml regular food medium
644 with a dash of live yeast illuminated with light from an LED lamp. We then added a single
645 male, either 1-day old or 4-days old. We recorded male and female behaviour for 5 min
646 starting with the first courtship, which usually occurred within a few min. We recorded all
647 starts and ends of male courtship bouts and the female's behaviour while being courted.
648 Females either were non-responsive and appeared to continue with their pre-courtship
649 activity, most often feeding, or clearly responded to males with wing fluttering, raising their
650 abdomen or decamping (Spieth 1952). While we also recorded whether females were

651 feeding, walking or idling on the cage wall, we had decided a priori to focus on the three
652 explicit female rejection behaviours. We calculated for each female the proportion of time
653 spent wing fluttering and abdomen raising, and the decamping rate. We calculated the
654 proportions of times and decamping rates based on the trial duration for each female, which
655 was 5 min in trials with no matings and the mating latency in trials with matings. We tested
656 20 males of each age category.

657

658 *2.7.2 Results*

659 Females' rates of abdomen raising (1.1 ± 0.5 vs $0.65 \pm .37$ per min, Wald $\chi^2_2=1.1$,
660 $n=40$, $P=0.3$), wing fluttering (4 ± 1.2 vs 3.4 ± 1 per min, Wald $\chi^2_2=0.9$, $n=40$, $P=0.6$) and
661 decamping (0.26 ± 0.08 vs 0.37 ± 0.15 per min, Wald $\chi^2_2=1.5$, $n=40$, $P=0.2$) were similar
662 towards young and mature males. Sixty percent of the young and 60% of the mature males
663 mated during the 5-min trials and their mating latencies were not significantly different
664 (69 ± 12 vs 100 ± 25 for young and mature males respectively; Wald $\chi^2_2=1.1$, $n=24$, $P=0.3$).

665

666 **2.8 Attractiveness to females of young and mature males**

667

668 A variety of female and male parameters could influence the observed age-specific
669 variation in male mate choosiness. We began by assessing the perceived attractiveness of
670 males to females. Because young and mature males courted with similar intensities and
671 mated at similar frequencies in no-choice trials with mature virgin females (Dukas & Baxter
672 2014), we focused on the mating latencies, which we expected to be negatively correlated
673 with male attractiveness.

674

675 *2.8.1 Methods*

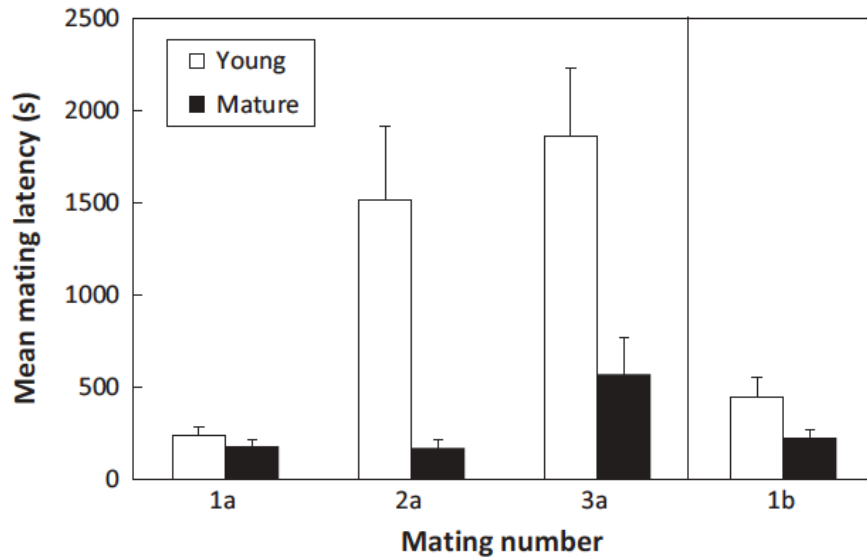
676 We tested whether young and mature males differed in their mating latencies across
677 three successive matings. We placed each male inside a food vial with a mature female and
678 allowed them to mate ($n=32$ males, half of each age). If males did not mate with the female
679 they were originally presented with in each trial, we replaced the female with a new one

680 every 20 minutes until mating occurred, or until the 60-minute trial was over. Observers
681 blind to male age recorded each male's mating latency. After each mating, we gave the
682 males a 15 minute break before placing them with a new female. All of the mature males
683 mated in each of the three trials. In the first trial, all of the young males also mated. In the
684 second trial, two young males did not mate within the hour and were given extra time to
685 mate. In the third trial, 4 of the 16 young males did not mate and these matings were
686 excluded from the analysis. In a follow-up experiment, we compared the mating latencies
687 of young and mature males only in their first mating (n=42 males, half of each age).

688

689 *2.8.2 Results*

690 There was a significant male age by trial interaction for mating latencies (Wald $\chi^2_1=$
691 22, n=32, $P<0.001$; Fig. 2.5, results shown to the left of the black line). The mating latencies
692 of young and mature males were similar in the first mating trial ($P=0.9$) but mating latencies
693 were shorter in mature than young males in the subsequent trials (Wald $\chi^2_1= 23$, n=32,
694 $P<0.001$). In the follow-up experiment, mature males had shorter mating latencies than
695 young males in their first mating (Wald $\chi^2_1=6.6$, n=42, $P=0.01$; Fig. 2.5, results shown to
696 the right of the black line).



697

698 **Figure 2.5**

699 The mating latencies (mean \pm 1 SE) of young (1-day-old) and mature (4-day-old) males
700 across three successive mating trials. Mating numbers 1a, 2a and 2a correspond to mating
701 latencies in the first experiment (n=16 young and 16 mature males; significant male age by
702 trial interaction ($P < 0.001$), whereas mating number 1b corresponds to results from the
703 follow-up experiment (n=21 young and 21 mature males with shorter mating latencies by
704 mature than young males, $P = 0.01$).

705 **2.9 Competitive ability of young and mature males**

706

707 Because the operational sex ratio in fruit flies is strongly male biased (Bateman 1948;
708 Spieth 1974), one can readily observe two males pursuing the same female simultaneously.
709 We thus wished to measure the competitive ability of young and mature males placed
710 together with a single female. Specifically, we wanted to see whether males of a given age
711 could monopolize the female and thus reduce the mating probability of males of the other
712 age.

713

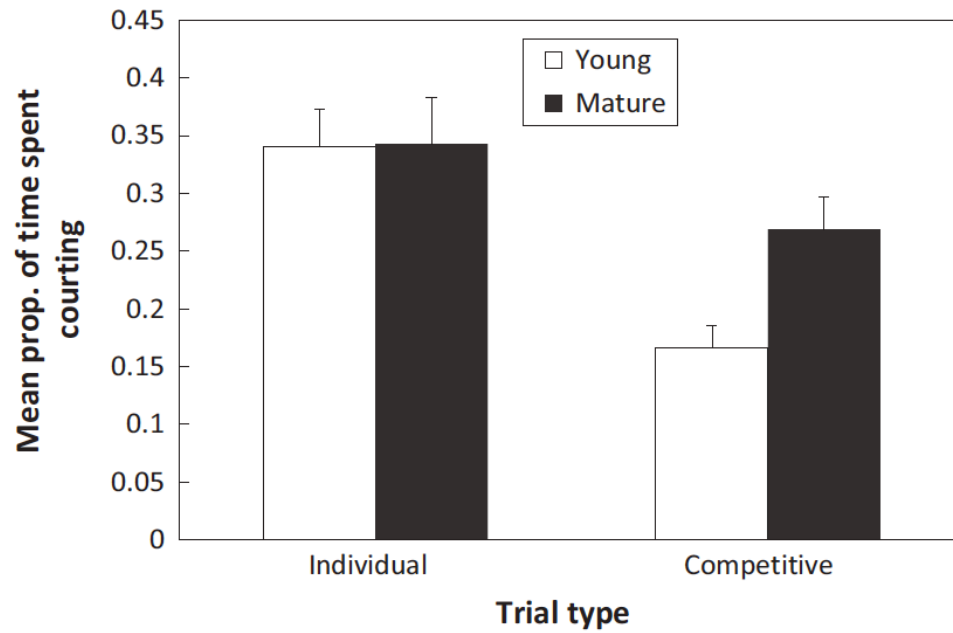
714 *2.9.1 Methods*

715 We conducted two types of trials. In the individual trials, we placed one male
716 (young or mature) in a vial with one immature virgin female ($n=54$ males). In the
717 competitive trials, we placed both a young and mature male in a vial with an immature
718 virgin female ($n=50$ males). We coloured one male per vial in the competitive trials with a
719 pink fluorescent powder to allow the observers to differentiate between them. Male
720 colouring was counterbalanced across trials and did not affect male courtship (Wald
721 $\chi^2_1=0.1$, $n=50$, $P=0.7$).

722

723 *2.9.2 Results*

724 In the individual trials, when each male was alone with a virgin female, both young
725 and mature males spent similar proportions of time courting (Wald $\chi^2_1=0.001$, $n=54$, $P=1$;
726 Fig. 2.6). However, in the competitive trials, when a young and mature male were together
727 with a virgin female, mature males spent significantly greater proportions of time courting
728 than did young males (Wald $\chi^2_1=9.6$, $n=50$, $P<0.005$; Fig. 2.6).



729

730 **Figure 2.6**

731 The proportion of time (mean \pm 1 SE) that young (1-day-old) and mature (4-day-old) males
732 spent courting virgin females under individual (1 male per vial, n=54 males) and
733 competitive (1 young and 1 mature male per vial, n=50 males) conditions. Mature males
734 spent more time than young males courting females under the competitive than individual
735 condition, $P < 0.005$).

736 **2.10 Fertility of young and mature males**

737

738 Our previous data (Dukas & Baxter 2014) indicated similar fertility of young and mature
739 males mated once with virgin females. The extensive literature on males' sophisticated
740 sperm allocation strategies (Wedell et al. 2002; Lüpold et al. 2011) suggests, however, that
741 mate choosiness can be higher in males with more limited supplies of sperm and seminal
742 fluids than in less limited males. We thus wished to quantify the total fertility of males over
743 three successive matings. Because male fertility is determined by both sperm and seminal
744 fluid, we preferred to count male offspring rather than sperm. Furthermore, we counted
745 adult offspring because they are a more relevant measure of male fitness than fertilized
746 eggs.

747

748 *2.10.1 Methods*

749 We allowed young (n=16) and mature (n=16) males to mate three times in
750 succession with mature virgin females. We reported the mating latencies for these males
751 above (Fig. 2.5, left side). We transferred the mated females into fresh food vials with live
752 yeast each day until they no longer laid fertilized eggs. Observers blind to male treatment
753 counted all adult offspring. We excluded from the analysis 13 females (14%) that died on
754 or before Day 5 of egg laying.

755 In a follow-up experiment, we allowed young and mature males to mate three times
756 in succession with 3 virgin 3-day-old females and counted the offspring that the males
757 fathered in their third mating. Although we started with 22 males of each age category,
758 50% of the young males and 5% of the mature males failed to mate for the third time
759 (Pearson $\chi^2_1=11.5$, n=44, $P<0.001$), leaving us with sample sizes of 11 and 21 respectively.

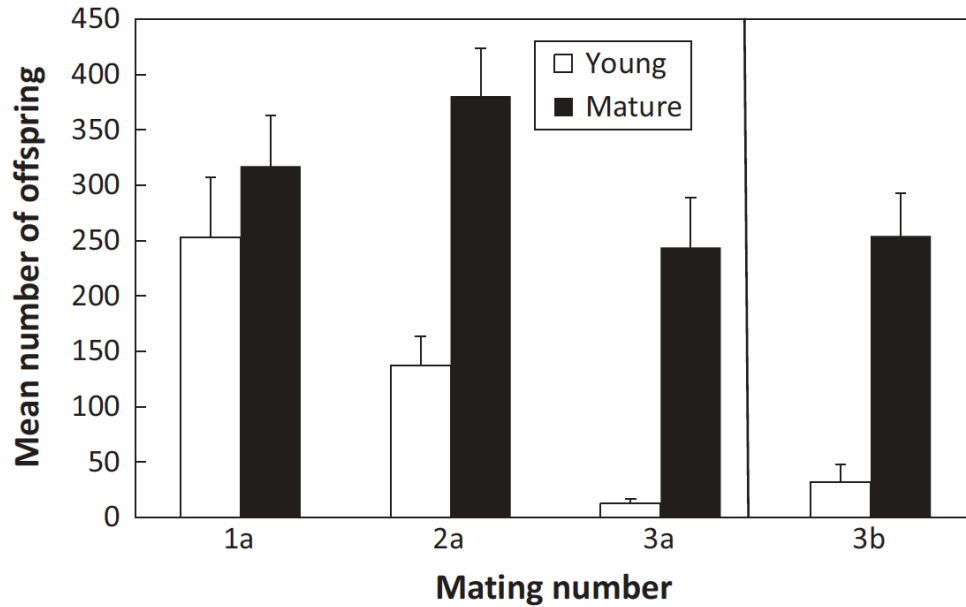
760

761 *2.10.2 Results*

762 There was a significant male age by mating number interaction for fertility (Wald
763 $\chi^2_2=58$, n=32 males, $P<0.001$; Fig. 2.7, results shown to the left of the black vertical line).
764 Young and mature males fathered similar numbers of offspring in their first mating ($P=1$).

765 Mature males, however, fathered significantly more offspring than young males in their
766 second and third matings (both $P < 0.001$). Overall, mature males fathered more than twice
767 as many offspring as did young males ($P < 0.001$).

768 In the follow up experiment, mature males again fathered more offspring in their
769 third successive mating than did young males (Wald $\chi^2_1 = 17$, $n = 32$, $P < 0.001$; Fig. 2.7,
770 results shown to the right of the black vertical line).



771

772 **Figure 2.7**

773 The number of offspring (mean \pm 1 SE) fathered by young (1-day-old) and mature (4-day-
774 old) males across three successive mating trials. Mating numbers 1a, 2a and 3a correspond
775 to offspring produced from the first experiment (n=16 young and 16 mature males),
776 whereas mating number 3b corresponds to results from the follow-up experiment (n=11
777 young and 21 mature males). Mature males fathered more offspring in all matings
778 ($P < 0.001$) except for 1a ($P = 1$).

779 **2.11 Fertility of mature males that have either encountered or been deprived of**
780 **females**

781

782 Because we documented higher mate choosiness in males that encountered females than in
783 males deprived of females, we wished to examine whether this difference could be
784 attributed to lower sperm and seminal fluid supplies in the former males. We thus compared
785 their fertility over three successive matings.

786

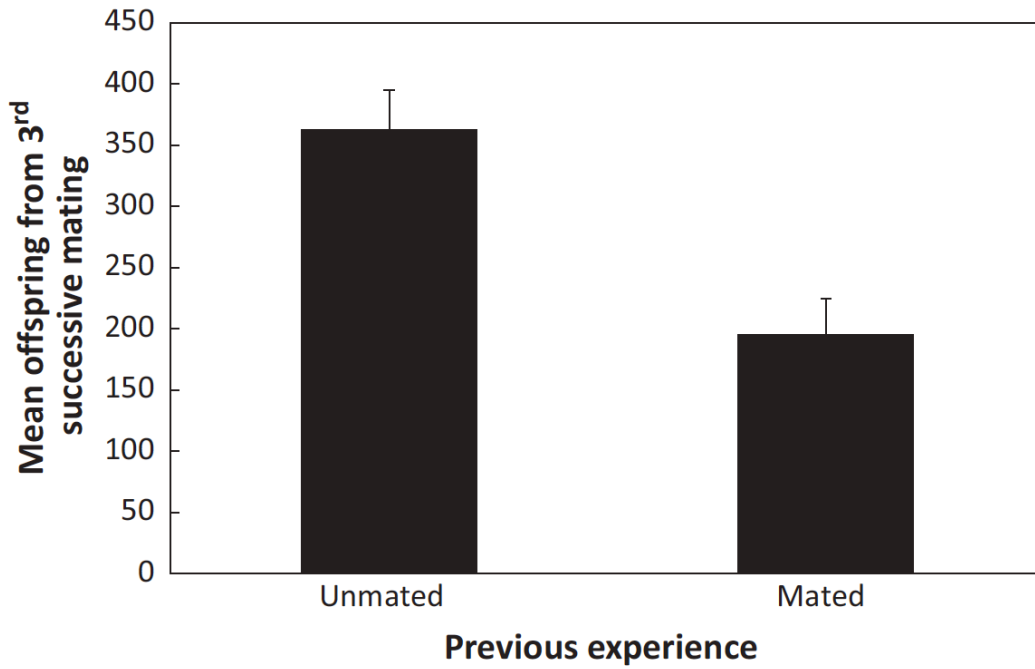
787 *2.11.1 Methods*

788 The mated treatment (n=20) consisted of males that had mated once each day on
789 days 1–3. The unmated males (n=20) had not mated prior to the test. On day 4, we allowed
790 all males to mate successively with three females and kept females from the third matings
791 for progeny count as described above. We excluded from the analysis one female that died
792 on Day 4 of egg laying.

793

794 *2.11.2 Results*

795 Previously unmated mature males produced significantly more offspring in their
796 third consecutive mating than did previously mated males (Wald $\chi^2_{1} = 6$, n=39, $P = 0.014$;
797 Fig. 2.8).



798

799 **Figure 2.8**

800 The number of offspring (mean \pm 1 SE) fathered by previously unmated (n=19) and
801 previously mated (n=20) mature (4-day old) males as a result of their third consecutive
802 mating. Unmated males fathered more offspring than previously mated males ($P<0.02$).

803 **2.12 Discussion**

804

805 Our two tests of the effects of male age on conspecific mate choosiness showed no effect
806 of age on males' preference to court large over small females (Fig. 2.1) but higher
807 choosiness by young than mature males encountering virgin and mated females (Fig. 2.2).
808 Together with our results showing higher mate choosiness in young than mature males
809 encountering conspecific and closely related heterospecific females (Dukas & Baxter
810 2014), we believe that the overall pattern is of young males being more reluctant than
811 mature males to persist in courting females with whom the probability of mating is low.
812 That is, males have some knowledge about their relatively low likelihood of mating with
813 mated conspecific females and virgin heterospecific females (Brieger & Butterworth 1970;
814 Jallon 1984; Ferveur 2005; Ng et al. 2014) as indicated by the fact that, regardless of age,
815 males spend less time courting such females (Figs 2.1-2.4 and Dukas and Baxter, 2014).
816 The virgin conspecific females, however, are highly attractive and even small females
817 appear to be above a threshold attractiveness that elicits as much courtship from young as
818 from mature males.

819 Refining our analysis of male age and mate choosiness, we found a steady pattern
820 of reduction in mate choosiness with males' age (Fig. 2.3). This pattern is consistent with
821 the two non-mutually exclusive hypotheses on the effect of an individual's age on mate
822 choosiness. First, from a life history perspective, one would expect a positive correlation
823 between the current mate choosiness and the expected future mating opportunities. That is,
824 older males face a shorter time horizon due to senescence and thus should be less choosy.
825 Field data indicate expected life span of about seven days in fruit flies (*D. melanogaster*)
826 (Rosewell & Shorrocks 1987) and male fertility shows dramatic decline in males over seven
827 days old (Edward & Chapman 2013) so the reduced mate choosiness with male age strongly
828 agrees with life history theory, which has traditionally focused on offspring production by
829 females (Stearns 1992). Indeed, data from distinct taxa indicate reduced mate choosiness
830 with age in females (Kodric-Brown & Nicoletto 2001; Moore & Moore 2001; Uetz &
831 Norton 2007; Wilgers & Hebets 2012). While we focus here on the ultimate mechanism

832 for the reduction in mate choosiness with age, a possible related proximate mechanism
833 could be a reduction in males' perceptual ability to discriminate between female types with
834 age. That is, the mechanism for the age-specific reduction in mate choosiness may be based
835 on differences in either perception or decision.

836 The other hypothesis linking age and mate choosiness involves the fact that, often,
837 age is positively correlated with the length of deprivation from the other sex. Both intuition
838 and optimality models predict a positive correlation between the encounter rate with
839 preferred prospective mates and mate choosiness (Wilson & Hedrick 1982) and data for
840 females in a variety of species agree with this prediction (Shelly & Bailey 1992; Berglund
841 1995; Dukas 2005b; Willis et al. 2011). Hence, in our protocols, encountering no females
842 at all for longer durations may have decreased male mate choosiness. We critically tested
843 a prediction derived from this hypothesis, that mate choosiness would be higher in mature
844 males previously exposed to females than in same-age, mature males previously deprived
845 of females. Our results indeed agree with this prediction (Fig. 2.4), but we cannot conclude
846 whether mate choosiness increases due to the daily matings by the experienced males or
847 their learning to focus courtship on females that are more likely to accept them as mates.
848 Males' learning in the context of courtship has been well examined in this system so we
849 know that, even among mature males deprived of matings, males that have experienced
850 rejections by either heterospecific or mated females are more choosy than inexperienced
851 males (Dukas 2005a; Dukas & Dukas 2012). It is likely though that both the effects of
852 deprivation and learning play a role in male mate choosiness.

853 In addition to the two hypotheses linking age and mate choosiness discussed above,
854 one can readily think of other age related factors that can influence male mate choosiness.
855 These include a positive correlation between males' mate choosiness and both their own
856 age-specific attractiveness to females and ability to outcompete other males, and a negative
857 correlation between males' age-specific sperm and seminal fluid stores and mate
858 choosiness (Fawcett & Johnstone 2003; Byrne & Rice 2006). Our experiments addressing
859 these factors revealed that young males are less attractive to females than mature males as
860 indicated by the longer time it took females under no-choice conditions to accept young

861 than mature males as mates. We found such differences even in males' first encounters with
862 females, and the gap in attractiveness widened dramatically in males previously mated once
863 or twice (Fig. 2.5). When we allowed one young and one mature male to compete for a
864 single female, the mature males monopolized the female, indicating that they can
865 outcompete young males for access to females (Fig. 2.6). Finally, our fertility tests
866 indicated that mature males are much more fertile than young males (Fig. 2.7).

867 Previous studies also documented higher mating success of older over younger
868 males. In one set of experiments involving two males of distinct ages and a single female
869 (Long et al. 1980), males' mating success was highest when 8 days old, intermediate when
870 4 days old and lowest when 2 days old. Male fertility in that study was low when males
871 were 2 days old and equally higher when they were 4 and 8 days old. In our previous study
872 (Dukas & Baxter 2014), we found a higher mating success of mature, 4-day-old males than
873 of young, 1-day old males when we placed one male of each age with a single female. Our
874 new data indicate that this outcome could reflect both the higher competitive ability of the
875 mature males (Fig. 2.6) and females' preference for mature over young males (Fig. 2.5).
876 While our data agree with those of Long et al (1980) indicating higher fertility of mature
877 than young males, we found no difference in males' fertility in their initial mating (Dukas
878 & Baxter 2014) but much lower fertility in subsequent matings (Fig. 2.7). Intriguingly,
879 males' fertility, as measured in their third successive mating, was lower in males exposed
880 to females prior to the test (Fig. 2.8). Such males could mate with virgin females only once
881 per day prior to the test day. The fact that this was sufficient to reduce male fertility
882 indicates that the males are rather limited in their ability to mate successively and that such
883 limitation could drive high male mate choosiness.

884 Surprisingly, two of the three male characteristics that we measured suggest that
885 young males should actually be less choosy than mature males because we expect less
886 attractive and less competitive males to be more willing to court less attractive females.
887 There are two non-mutually exclusive explanations to this apparent contradiction. First, it
888 is possible that the males' relatively low sperm and seminal fluid stores override the other
889 factors and reduce their willingness to persist in courting less attractive females. Second,

890 the young males' higher expected probability of encountering receptive females, perhaps
891 combined with multiple costs of courtship and mating, may make them more choosy than
892 mature males.

893 Overall, our data show that, in males with no previous exposure to females, there is
894 a gradual decrease in male mate choosiness with age (Fig. 2.3). Prior exposure to
895 conspecific females, however, significantly increases male mate choosiness (Fig. 2.4).
896 Furthermore, low expected fertility, most likely due to ejaculate limitation (Figs. 2.7 and
897 2.8), is associated with high levels of male mate choosiness. Finally, previous work
898 indicates that male learning, based on either encounters with conspecific or heterospecific
899 females, increases male mate choosiness (Dukas 2004; Dukas 2005a; Dukas & Dukas
900 2012). Combining all this information, we expect that, in nature, young males will be
901 choosy, and that they will maintain high levels of choosiness once they gain further
902 experience with age. We still do not know whether conflicting factors, most notably,
903 decreasing probability of future matings with increasing age, would ultimately reduce male
904 mate choosiness. Our data thus suggest that male mate choosiness may be an important
905 factor influencing both sexual selection and incipient speciation.

906

907 **2.13 Acknowledgements**

908

909 We thank A. Scott, R. Wilson-Jeffers and J. Tan for assistance and the Natural Sciences
910 and Engineering Research Council of Canada, Canada Foundation for Innovation, and
911 Ontario Innovation Trust for funding.

912 **2.14 References**

913

914 Bateman, A. J. 1948: Intra-sexual selection in *Drosophila*. *Heredity* **2**, 349-368.

915 Berglund, A. 1995: Many mates make male pipefish choosy. *Behaviour* **132**, 213-218.

916 Bonduriansky, R. 2001: The evolution of male mate choice in insects: a synthesis of ideas
917 and evidence. *Biological Reviews* **76**, 305-339.

918 Brieger, G. & Butterworth, F. M. 1970: *Drosophila melanogaster*: identity of male lipid in
919 reproductive system. *Science* **167**, 1262.

920 Byrne, P. G. & Rice, W. R. 2006: Evidence for adaptive male mate choice in the fruit fly
921 *Drosophila melanogaster*. *Proceedings of the Royal Society of London B-
922 Biological Sciences* **273**, 917-922.

923 Clutton-Brock, T. & Langley, P. 1997: Persistent courtship reduces male and female
924 longevity in captive tsetse flies *Glossina morsitans morsitans* Westwood (Diptera:
925 Glossinidae). *Behavioral Ecology* **8**, 392-395.

926 Clutton-Brock, T. H. 1988: *Reproductive Success*. University of Chicago Press, Chicago.

927 Cook, R. & Cook, A. 1975: The attractiveness of female *Drosophila melanogaster*: effects
928 of mating, age and diet. *Animal Behaviour* **23**, 521-526.

929 Cordts, R. & Partridge, L. 1996: Courtship reduces longevity of male *Drosophila
930 melanogaster*. *Animal Behaviour* **52**, 269-278.

931 Dewsbury, D. A. 1982: Ejaculate cost and male choice. *American Naturalist*, 601-610.

932 Dukas, R. 2004: Male fruit flies learn to avoid interspecific courtship. *Behavioral Ecology
933* **15**, 695-698.

934 -. 2005a: Experience improves courtship in male fruit flies. *Animal Behaviour* **69**, 1203-
935 1209.

936 -. 2005b: Learning affects mate choice in female fruit flies. *Behavioral Ecology* **16**, 800-
937 804.

938 Dukas, R. & Baxter, C. M. 2014: Mate choosiness in young male fruit flies. *Behavioral
939 Ecology* **25**, 549-552.

940 Dukas, R. & Dukas, L. 2012: Learning about prospective mates in male fruit flies: effects
941 of acceptance and rejection. *Animal Behaviour* **84**, 1427-1434.

942 Edward, D. A. & Chapman, T. 2011: The evolution and significance of male mate choice.
943 *Trends in Ecology & Evolution* **26**, 647-654.

944 -. 2012: Measuring the fitness benefits of male mate choice in *Drosophila melanogaster*.
945 *Evolution* **66**, 2646-2653.

946 -. 2013: Life history variation in male mate choice in *Drosophila melanogaster*. *Animal
947 Behaviour* **86**, 269-275.

948 Everaerts, C., Farine, J.-P., Cobb, M. & Ferveur, J.-F. 2010: *Drosophila* cuticular
949 hydrocarbons revisited: mating status alters cuticular profiles. *PLoS ONE* **5**, e9607.

950 Fawcett, T. W. & Johnstone, R. A. 2003: Mate choice in the face of costly competition.
951 *Behavioral Ecology* **14**, 771-779.

952 Ferveur, J. 2005: Cuticular hydrocarbons: their evolution and roles in *Drosophila
953* pheromonal communication. *Behavior Genetics* **35**, 279-295.

- 954 Gilchrist, A. S. & Partridge, L. 1999: A comparison of the genetic basis of wing size
955 divergence in three parallel body size clines of *Drosophila melanogaster*. *Genetics*
956 **153**, 1775-1787.
- 957 Herbert, J. 1968: Sexual preference in the rhesus monkey *Macaca mulatta* in the laboratory.
958 *Animal behaviour* **16**, 120-128.
- 959 Honěk, A. 1993: Intraspecific variation in body size and fecundity in insects: a general
960 relationship. *Oikos*, 483-492.
- 961 Howard, R. W. & Blomquist, G. J. 2005: Ecological, behavioral, and biochemical aspects
962 of insect hydrocarbons. *Annual Review of Entomology* **50**, 371-393.
- 963 IBM-Corp. 2011: IBM SPSS Statistics for Windows, Version 21.0. IBM Corp., Armonk,
964 NY.
- 965 Jallon, J. M. 1984: A few chemical words exchanged by *Drosophila* during courtship and
966 mating. *Behavior Genetics* **14**, 441-478.
- 967 Kodric-Brown, A. & Nicoletto, P. F. 2001: Age and experience affect female choice in the
968 guppy (*Poecilia reticulata*). *The American Naturalist* **157**, 316-323.
- 969 Kokko, H., Jennions, M. D. & Brooks, R. 2006: Unifying and Testing Models of Sexual
970 Selection. *Annual Review of Ecology, Evolution, and Systematics* **37**, 43-66.
- 971 Kokko, H. & Monaghan, P. 2001: Predicting the direction of sexual selection. *Ecology*
972 *letters* **4**, 159-165.
- 973 Kotiaho, J. S. 2000: Testing the assumptions of conditional handicap theory: costs and
974 condition dependence of a sexually selected trait. *Behavioral Ecology and*
975 *Sociobiology* **48**, 188-194.
- 976 Lasbleiz, C., Ferveur, J.-F. & Everaerts, C. 2006: Courtship behaviour of *Drosophila*
977 *melanogaster* revisited. *Animal Behaviour* **72**, 1001-1012.
- 978 Long, C. E., Markow, T. A. & Yaeger, P. 1980: Relative male age, fertility, and competitive
979 mating success in *Drosophila melanogaster*. *Behavior Genetics* **10**, 163-170.
- 980 Long, T. A. F., Pischedda, A., Stewart, A. D. & Rice, W. R. 2009: A cost of sexual
981 attractiveness to high-fitness females. *Plos Biology* **7**, e1000254.
- 982 Lüpold, S., Manier, M. K., Ala-Honkola, O., Belote, J. M. & Pitnick, S. 2011: Male
983 *Drosophila melanogaster* adjust ejaculate size based on female mating status,
984 fecundity, and age. *Behavioral Ecology* **22**, 184-191.
- 985 Manning, J. T. 1975: Male Discrimination and Investment in *Asellus aquaticus* (L.) and *A.*
986 *meridianus* *Racovitsza* (Crustacea: Isopoda). *Behaviour* **55**, 1-14.
- 987 Martel, V., Damiens, D. & Boivin, G. 2008: Male mate choice in *Trichogramma*
988 *turkestanica*. *Journal of Insect Behavior* **21**, 63-71.
- 989 Moore, P. J. & Moore, A. J. 2001: Reproductive aging and mating: The ticking of the
990 biological clock in female cockroaches. *Proceedings of the National Academy of*
991 *Sciences* **98**, 9171-9176.
- 992 Ng, S. H., Shankar, S., Shikichi, Y., Akasaka, K., Mori, K. & Yew, J. Y. 2014: Pheromone
993 evolution and sexual behavior in *Drosophila* are shaped by male sensory
994 exploitation of other males. *Proceedings of the National Academy of Sciences* **111**,
995 3056-3061.
- 996

- 997 Peterson, M. A., Honchak, B. M., Locke, S. E., Beeman, T. E., Mendoza, J., Green, J.,
998 Buckingham, K. J., White, M. A. & Monsen, K. J. 2005: Relative abundance and
999 the species-specific reinforcement of male mating preference in the chrysochus
1000 (Coleoptera: Chrysomelidae) hybrid zone. *Evolution* **59**, 2639-2655.
- 1001 Pizzari, T., Cornwallis, C. K., Løvlie, H., Jakobsson, S. & Birkhead, T. R. 2003:
1002 Sophisticated sperm allocation in male fowl. *Nature* **426**, 70 - 74.
- 1003 Ramm, S. A. & Stockley, P. 2014: Sequential male mate choice under sperm competition
1004 risk. *Behavioral Ecology* **25**, 660-667.
- 1005 Robertson, F. W. 1957: Studies in quantitative inheritance XI. Genetic and environmental
1006 correlation between body size and egg production in *Drosophila melanogaster*.
1007 *Journal of Genetics* **55**, 428-443.
- 1008 Roff, D. 1992: *The Evolution of Life Histories*. Cahpman & Hall, New York.
- 1009 Rosewell, J. & Shorrocks, B. 1987: The implication of survival rates in natural populations
1010 of *Drosophila*: capture-recapture experiments on domestic species. *Biological*
1011 *Journal of the Linnean Society* **32**, 373-384.
- 1012 Schwagmeyer, P. & Parker, G. 1990: Male mate choice as predicted by sperm competition
1013 in thirteen-lined ground squirrels. *Nature* **348**, 62-64.
- 1014 Servedio, M. & Dukas, R. 2013: Effects on population divergence of within-generational
1015 learning about prospective mates. *Evolution* **67**, 2363-2375.
- 1016 Shelly, T. E. & Bailey, W. J. 1992: Experimental manipulation of mate choice by male
1017 katydids - the effect of female encounter rate. *Behavioral Ecology and Sociobiology*
1018 **30**, 277-282.
- 1019 Spieth, H. T. 1952: Mating behavior within the genus *Drosophila* (Diptera). *Bulletin of the*
1020 *American Museum of Natural History* **99**, 395-474.
- 1021 Spieth, H. T. 1974: Courtship behavior in *Drosophila*. *Annual Review of Entomology* **19**,
1022 383-406.
- 1023 Stearns, S. 1992: *The Evolution of Life Histories*. Oxford University Press, Oxford.
- 1024 Uetz, G. & Norton, S. 2007: Preference for male traits in female wolf spiders varies with
1025 the choice of available males, female age and reproductive state. *Behavioral*
1026 *Ecology and Sociobiology* **61**, 631-641.
- 1027 Van Voorhies, W. A. 1992: Production of sperm reduces nematode lifespan.
- 1028 Wedell, N., Gage, M. J. & Parker, G. A. 2002: Sperm competition, male prudence and
1029 sperm-limited females. *Trends in Ecology & Evolution* **17**, 313-320.
- 1030 Wilgers, D. & Hebets, E. 2012: Age-related female mating decisions are condition
1031 dependent in wolf spiders. *Behavioral Ecology and Sociobiology* **66**, 29-38.
- 1032 Willis, P. M., Ryan, M. J. & Rosenthal, G. G. 2011: Encounter rates with conspecific males
1033 influence female mate choice in a naturally hybridizing fish. *Behavioral Ecology*
1034 **22**, 1234-1240.
- 1035 Wilson, D. & Hedrick, A. 1982: Speciation and the economics of mate choice. *Evolutionary*
1036 *Theory* **6**, 15-24.
- 1037 Yew, J. Y., Dreisewerd, K., Luftmann, H., Müthing, J., Pohlentz, G. E. & Kravitz, E. A.
1038 2009: A new male sex pheromone and novel cuticular cues for chemical
1039 communication in *Drosophila* *Current Biology* **19**, 1245-1254.

- 1040 Zawistowski, S. & Richmond, R. C. 1986: Inhibition of courtship and mating of *Drosophila*
1041 *melanogaster* by the male-produced lipid, cis-vaccenyl acetate. Journal of Insect
1042 Physiology **32**, 189-192.

1043 **CHAPTER 3 – MATING SUCCESS IN FRUIT FLIES: COURTSHIP**
1044 **INTERFERENCE VERSUS FEMALE CHOICE**

1045

1046 Baxter, C. M., Mentlik, J., Shams, I. & Dukas, R. (2018) Mating success in fruit flies:
1047 Courtship interference versus female choice. *Animal Behaviour*. 138: 101–108.

1048

1049 **3.1 Abstract**

1050

1051 The outcomes of sexual selection often differ when mating success is determined by male
1052 contest rather than female choice. Many studies, however, inferred sexual selection driven
1053 by female choice without carefully assessing the role of subtle male aggression. Relying on
1054 close-up video analyses, we documented novel courtship interference between male fruit
1055 flies, a key model system in research on sexual selection, sexual conflict and speciation. In
1056 experiments comparing male mating success under choice (2 males + 1 female) and no-
1057 choice (1 male + 1 female) conditions, we found that, in some cases, courtship interference
1058 altered male mating success. Both choice and no-choice protocols have known weaknesses.
1059 Choice protocols do not control for male-male interactions while no-choice protocols do
1060 not allow females to compare and choose between males. To overcome these weaknesses,
1061 we developed a new protocol (true-choice), which allows females to freely visit and assess
1062 each of two males while preventing direct male-male interactions. Results from the true-
1063 choice protocol suggest that traits enhancing male aggression have a greater role in
1064 determining mating success in fruit flies. Furthermore, it is possible that the mating system
1065 of scramble competition observed in many species should be reclassified as subtle male
1066 contest, which can drive sexual selection for aggressive male features.

1067

1068 **Key words:** aggression; competition; courtship; *Drosophila melanogaster*; fruit flies; mate
1069 choice

1070 **3.2 Introduction**

1071

1072 In many animals, the evolution of sexually selected traits is driven solely by either contests
1073 among males for access to females or females' choices of mates among the males that they
1074 encounter. In such clear cases, one can safely focus on either intra- or inter-sexual selection.
1075 Often, however, sexual selection is determined by a combination of male-male contests and
1076 female choice (Andersson 1994; Qvarnström & Forsgren 1998; Hunt et al. 2009; Shuker &
1077 Simmons 2014). If the same traits, such as body size or dominance, are favoured by both
1078 male-male contests and female choice, then the distinction between the two mechanisms
1079 may be negligible. If different features, however, determine which males have access to
1080 females and which males are preferred by females, then it is crucial that we assess the
1081 separate contributions to sexual selection of male-male interactions and female choice.

1082 Quantifying the distinct effects of male contest and pure female choice is
1083 challenging and attempts at doing so have had variable success determined by species'
1084 natural histories and the experimental protocols employed. An example of a successful
1085 attempt involves the scarlet-tufted malachite sunbird (*Nectarinia johnstoni*), in which field
1086 observations supplemented by experiments indicate that the males' scarlet pectoral tufts are
1087 important in male contests over territories whereas the males' tail lengths affect female
1088 choice (Evans & Hatchwell 1992a, b). Often, attempts to separate female choice from male
1089 contest involve species in which interactions are assumed to be primarily visual or auditory.
1090 In the visual species, partitions between males and females and tests for female proximity
1091 to each male might indicate female choice while controlling for male contest (e.g. Bischoff
1092 et al. 1985; Zuk et al. 1990). Similarly, use of speakers in species with acoustic courtship
1093 eliminates male contest (e.g. Ryan 1980; Eriksson & Wallin 1986). However, in many
1094 animals including the species that rely on visual or auditory features, physical contact is an
1095 integral component of courtship. Such contact allows for the exchange of olfactory,
1096 gustatory and somatosensory information (e.g. Lack 1940; Johnston 2003; Hughes et al.
1097 2007; Ferveur 2010; Wlodarski & Dunbar 2014). In such species, it is challenging to
1098 provide females with choice while simultaneously eliminating male-male interactions.

1099 The most common method for addressing female choice in species in which contact
1100 is part of the courtship ritual is to simply assume negligible effects of male contest. This
1101 indeed has been the standard protocol in numerous experiments on fruit flies (*Drosophila*
1102 *melanogaster*), a key model system in research on mate choice, sexual conflict and
1103 speciation (Coyne & Orr 2004; Rice et al. 2006). In such choice studies, experimenters
1104 simultaneously present to each focal female two males belonging to distinct categories and
1105 record which male succeeds in mating. An alternative protocol is to present each focal
1106 female with only a single male at a time and record mating rates and latencies. This
1107 protocol, often referred to as ‘no-choice’, prevents females from comparing males with
1108 distinct features before deciding whether to mate or not with the only male they have
1109 encountered. Choice protocols reveal stronger mate preferences than do no-choice tests
1110 perhaps owing to the ease of comparison between prospective mates and lower cost of
1111 rejecting a potential mate when females encounter two rather than one male (Dougherty &
1112 Shuker 2015). The choice protocol, however, cannot rule out male-male interactions, which
1113 could affect access to females even in species with no overt aggression.

1114 The recent adoption of fruit flies as a model system for mechanistic research on
1115 aggression (Chen et al. 2002; Asahina 2017) has sensitized us to the possibility that
1116 apparent mate choice under the prevalent choice protocol is influenced by subtle male
1117 aggression. As with many other species (Emlen & Oring 1977), fruit flies’ mating system
1118 varies as a function of density and resource distribution. The recent work on fruit fly
1119 aggression has appropriately focused on the mating system scenario characterizing low fly
1120 density and small, defendable fruits. In such settings, fruit flies show resource defence
1121 polygyny, where capable males rely on aggression to defend attractive fruits where females
1122 gather to feed and lay eggs (Markow 1988; Hoffmann & Cacoyianni 1990; Baxter et al.
1123 2015b). Under the prevalent conditions of high fly density and large food clumps, however,
1124 the predominant assertion has been that male fruit flies show scramble competition for
1125 mates (Spieth 1974), a mating system that is rather common in insects (Thornhill & Alcock
1126 1983). Scramble competition is consistent with choice protocols, because it assumes that
1127 multiple males court females and females choose their mates.

1128 Because past observations in many laboratories including ours indicated no overt
1129 aggression during mate choice trials, we wished to test whether subtle aggression could
1130 bias male access to females. Based on previous work, we chose two realistic choice
1131 scenarios, one involving males that varied in age and the other involving males that varied
1132 in size. For both scenarios, our own and others' research suggested female preference for
1133 older over younger males (Long et al. 1980; Dukas & Baxter 2014; Baxter et al. 2015a)
1134 and for large over small males (Partridge et al. 1987; Dukas 2005). These studies, however,
1135 did not assess the possible influence of subtle male aggression. We thus asked whether
1136 males rely on subtle aggression to monopolize access to females, and whether such
1137 interactions bias male mating success. To this end, we first conducted video recording
1138 trials, each with two males and an immature female to quantify subtle aggression. Second,
1139 we simultaneously assessed male mating success in choice and no-choice trials. Finally, to
1140 resolve the weaknesses of the no-choice and choice trials, we developed a new protocol in
1141 which a female can freely assess sequentially two males housed in distinct compartments
1142 and then choose her mate. We refer to this set up as 'true-choice'. We then compared male
1143 mating success under the classical choice protocol, which cannot separate effects of male-
1144 male interactions and female choice, and under the true-choice setup, which eliminates
1145 male-male interactions.

1146

1147 **3.3 General methods**

1148

1149 We used descendants of wild-caught *D. melanogaster* collected in several southern Ontario
1150 localities in August 2014. We housed the flies in population cages containing several
1151 hundred flies per cage. We kept the cages in an environmental chamber at 25°C and 60%
1152 relative humidity with a 12:12 h light:dark cycle, with the lights turning on at 10 am. Unless
1153 stated otherwise, we reared the experimental flies at a low density of about 300 eggs per
1154 240 ml bottle containing 50 ml of standard fly medium made of water, sucrose, cornmeal,
1155 yeast, agar and methyl paraben. We sexed flies within 4 hours of eclosion to ensure
1156 virginity and minimal experience with other flies. We used gentle aspiration to live-sex and

1157 transfer males into individual 40 ml vials each containing 5 ml of fly medium. We
1158 anaesthetized females with CO₂ to sex and place them in groups of 20 per vial, which
1159 contained the same amount of fly medium plus a dash of live yeast.

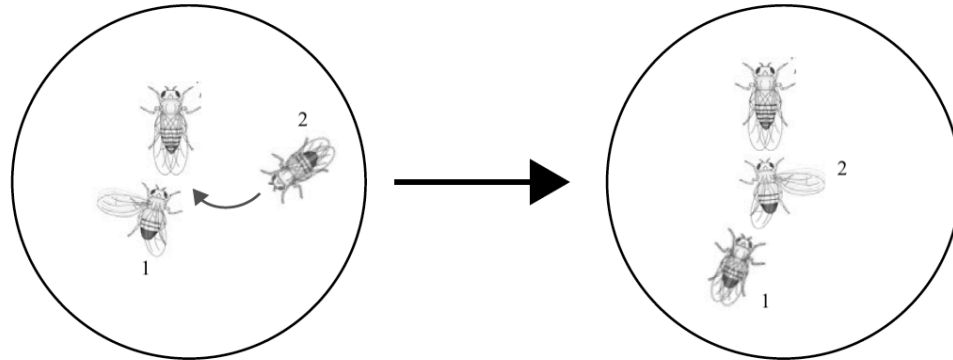
1160 Unless stated otherwise, we conducted all tests in cylindrical arenas made of
1161 Plexiglas (3 cm in diameter and 2.5 cm high). We covered the floor of each arena with a
1162 piece of filter paper. To deter flies from climbing on the arenas' walls and ceilings, we
1163 coated the walls with Insect-a-Slip (Fluon; BioQuip, Gardena, CA, U.S.A.) and the ceilings
1164 with Surfasil (Sigma Aldrich, Oakville, ON, Canada). When dry, Fluon and Surfasil form
1165 an odorless slippery film, which flies cannot walk on. Fluon and Surfasil have been used in
1166 insect studies for a long time and do not appear to have negative effects (Radinovsky &
1167 Krantz 1962; Asahina et al. 2014).

1168

1169 **3.4 Male size, courtship interference and mating success**

1170

1171 We first wished to test whether males relied on subtle aggression for monopolizing access
1172 to females. To this end, we relied on close-up video recordings to quantify subtle aggression
1173 between small and large males in choice trials. Based on preliminary observations, we
1174 focused on male takeovers, defined as a male positioning himself between the courting
1175 male and the female and taking over the courtship (Fig. 3.1). Previous data indicated that
1176 large males outcompete small males for access to attractive food patches (Hoffmann 1987;
1177 Asahina 2017). We thus predicted higher takeover rates by large than small males. To
1178 assess the effects of courtship interference on male courtship, we compared the courtship
1179 duration of large and small males under both no-choice and choice protocols (Fig. 3.2). We
1180 predicted that large males would spend more time courting females than small males in the
1181 choice than in the no-choice trials. Finally, we predicted a higher relative mating success
1182 by large than small males in the choice than no-choice trials.

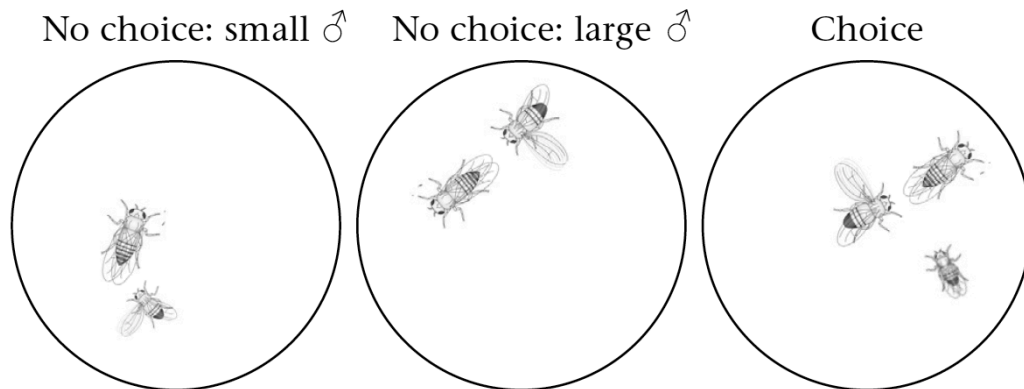


1183

1184 **Figure 3.1**

1185 Depiction of a courtship takeover. In the left circle, male 1 is courting the female and male
1186 2 pushes in between them. In the right circle, male 2 has displaced male 1 and is courting
1187 the female.

1188



1189

1190 **Figure 3.2**

1191 Diagram of the protocols for courtship interference and mating success in small vs. large
1192 males. Females were sexually immature in the courtship experiment and sexually mature
1193 in the competitive mating experiment. Note that males are smaller than females and have a
1194 dark posterior.

1195 *3.4.1 Courtship interference - Methods*

1196 We conducted two types of trials: no-choice and choice (Fig. 3.2). In no-choice
1197 trials, we placed one male (either a small or large male) with one immature virgin female
1198 (<18 hours post eclosion) in an arena ($N_{\text{small}}=30$, $N_{\text{large}}=30$). In the choice trials, we placed
1199 two males (one small and one large male) with one immature female in an arena
1200 simultaneously ($N_{\text{choice}}=30$). We used immature virgin females because they are as sexually
1201 attractive to males as mature virgin females, but they always reject males (Dukas & Dukas
1202 2012). By using females who consistently reject males we could accurately assess male
1203 courtship and competitive ability, without female preference affecting each male's
1204 courtship opportunities.

1205 We obtained small and large males by rearing flies under different densities. While
1206 we refer to the males by their obvious size differences, they probably differed in a variety
1207 of other traits influenced by larval density (Bangham et al. 2002; Lüpold et al. 2011; Wigby
1208 et al. 2016). We reared small males in high density food vials with approximately 200 eggs
1209 per vial containing 1.5 ml of the standard fly medium, whereas we reared large males in
1210 low-density food bottles with approximately 100 eggs per bottle containing 50 ml of the
1211 standard fly medium. Within 4 hours of eclosion, we transferred adult males to individual
1212 vials with ample food until the time of testing (4 days later). Females were reared in food
1213 bottles with 50mL of food and 300-400 flies per bottle. After testing, we measured the wing
1214 length of a random sample of 12 small and 12 large males. We removed the right wing of
1215 each male, mounted it on a microscope slide and measured the linear distance between the
1216 humeral–costal break and the end of the third longitudinal vein (Gilchrist & Partridge
1217 1999). The wings of large males were approximately 25% longer than those of small males,
1218 1.85 ± 0.017 vs. 1.48 ± 0.020 mm, respectively (t-test: $t_{22}=14.14$, $N=24$, $p<0.001$).

1219 After placing the flies in the arena, we began video recording for 15 minutes using
1220 Logitech HD Pro C920 and iPad Air cameras. Observers scored the videos using the
1221 Observer software (Noldus Information Technology, Wageningen, The Netherlands). Due
1222 to the males' visible size differences, it was not possible for observers to be blind to the

1223 male size manipulation. However, the observers were not aware of our predictions about
1224 male size and competitive courtship ability.

1225 In the no-choice condition, where there was just one male and one female per arena,
1226 observers recorded the duration of courtship, and who terminated each courtship bout. If
1227 the male turned or flew away from the female, or simply stopped chasing her, we counted
1228 it as the male terminating the courtship bout. If the female decamped (jumped or flew away
1229 from the male) we counted it as the female terminating the courtship bout (Dukas & Scott
1230 2015). In the choice condition, where there were two males and one female per arena,
1231 observers recorded the duration of courtship and the number of courtship takeovers
1232 performed by each male. Because courtship typically involves the male closely following
1233 the female, only one male can court at any given time. Furthermore, only the non-courting
1234 male can interfere with the courtship of the other male. That is, courtship and courtship
1235 interference are mutually exclusive.

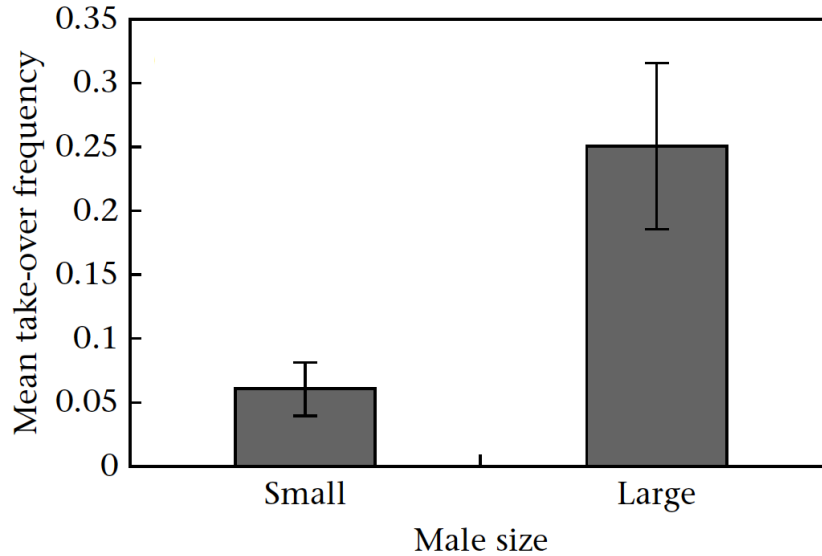
1236 We used linear and generalized linear mixed-effects models (LMM and GLMM) in
1237 R version 3.3.3 (R-Core-Team 2014) with the package lme4 version 1.1-12 (Bates et al.
1238 2014) to analyze the takeover frequency, courtship duration and courtship termination data.
1239 For tests of the fixed effects, we report Wald χ^2 values generated with the Anova function
1240 from the car package version 2.1-4 (Fox & Weisberg 2011). For the takeover data, we used
1241 a GLMM with a negative binomial distribution with the total number of takeovers each
1242 male performed as the dependent measure, male size as a fixed factor and arena ID as a
1243 random factor (to account for the non-independence of two males in the same arena). We
1244 also included the log duration of each male's competitor's courtship as an offset in the
1245 model to account for the fact that a male's takeover opportunities are constrained by his
1246 competitor's courtship (for example, a male whose competitor barely courts has fewer
1247 takeover opportunities than a male whose competitor courts frequently). For the courtship
1248 duration data, we used a LMM with the proportion of time spent courting as the dependent
1249 measure, male size and trial type as fixed factors and arena ID as a random factor. We
1250 analyzed the female courtship termination data similarly to the takeover data (with total

1251 female courtship terminations as the dependent measure and the log duration of courtship
1252 as an offset).

1253

1254 *3.4.2 Courtship interference - Results*

1255 In the choice trials, large males performed significantly more courtship takeovers
1256 than small males (GLMM with negative binomial distribution, $\chi^2_1=14.9$, $N=60$, $p<0.001$;
1257 Fig 3.3). Across both trial types, large males spent significantly more time courting than
1258 small males (LMM, $\chi^2_1= 7.67$, $N=90$, $p<0.01$; Fig. 3.4). However, contrary to our
1259 prediction, the effect of the interaction between male size and trial type on the duration of
1260 time males spent courting was not significant ($\chi^2_1=0.42$, $N=90$, $p=0.52$; Fig. 3.4). In the no-
1261 choice trials, we recorded who terminated each courtship bout (i.e. the female or the male).
1262 There was no effect of male size on the frequency with which females terminated courtship
1263 (GLMM with negative binomial distribution, $\chi^2_1=0.045$, $N=60$, $p=0.83$).

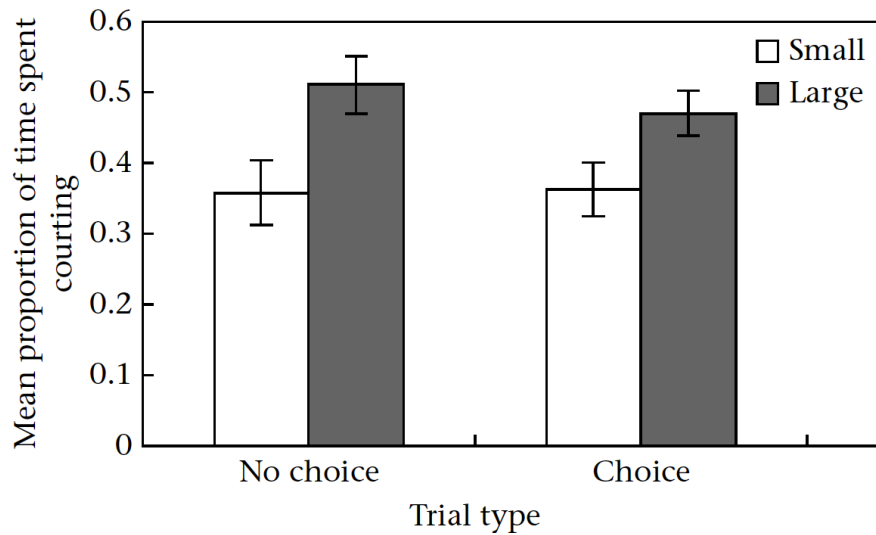


1264

1265 **Figure 3.3**

1266 Mean \pm SE takeover frequency for small and large males in the choice trials ($N_{\text{choice}}=30$).

1267



1268

1269 **Figure 3.4**

1270 Mean \pm SE proportion of time males spent courting a female in no-choice trials (1 male + 1
1271 female ($N_{\text{small}}=30$, $N_{\text{large}}=30$)) and in choice trials (small male + large male + female
1272 simultaneously ($N_{\text{choice}}=30$)).

1273 *3.4.3 Mating success in choice vs. no-choice trials - Methods*

1274 In the previous experiment, we used sexually immature females so that we could
1275 assess male courtship effort and competitive ability under controlled conditions of
1276 consistent rejection from females. To assess the differential mating success of males with
1277 and without competition, we performed a similar experiment to the previous one, but used
1278 mature virgin females.

1279 We again conducted no-choice and choice trials (Fig. 3.2). In the no-choice trials,
1280 we placed one male (small or large) with a mature, 4-day-old, virgin female in the arena
1281 ($N_{\text{small}}=123$, $N_{\text{large}}=122$). In the choice trials, we placed two males (one small and one large)
1282 with a mature, 4-day-old, virgin female in the arena ($N_{\text{choice}}=122$). Observers who were
1283 naïve to our predictions scanned the arenas for mating. Trials ended once mating occurred,
1284 or after 30 minutes had passed.

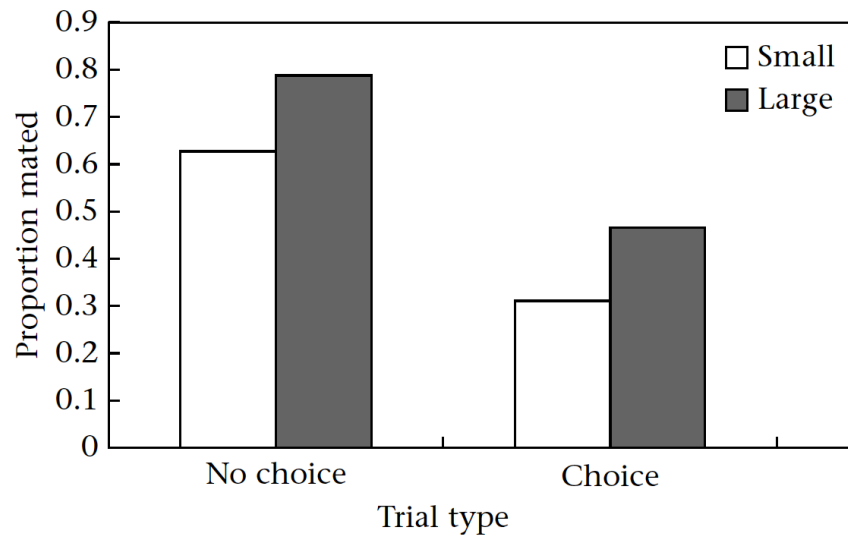
1285 As in the previous experiment, after testing, we measured the wing length of a
1286 random sample of 13 small and 13 large males. The wings of large males were
1287 approximately 24% longer than those of small males, 1.80 ± 0.014 vs. 1.45 ± 0.014 mm,
1288 respectively (T-test: $t_{24}=17.31$, $N=26$, $p<0.001$)

1289 We performed a binomial test in IBM SPSS (IBM Corp., 2011) to compare the
1290 observed proportions of matings in the choice treatment to the expected proportions, which
1291 were calculated based on the mating success in the no-choice treatment by small and large
1292 males. In this analysis, we treated each vial containing two males and a female as the
1293 experimental unit.

1294

1295 *3.4.4 Mating success in choice vs. no-choice trials - Results*

1296 The proportion of large males mated in the choice trials was nearly identical to what
1297 was expected based on the proportion mated in the no-choice trials (binomial test, $N_{\text{no-}}$
1298 $\text{choice}=245$, $N_{\text{choice}}=122$ $p=0.24$; Fig. 3.5).



1299

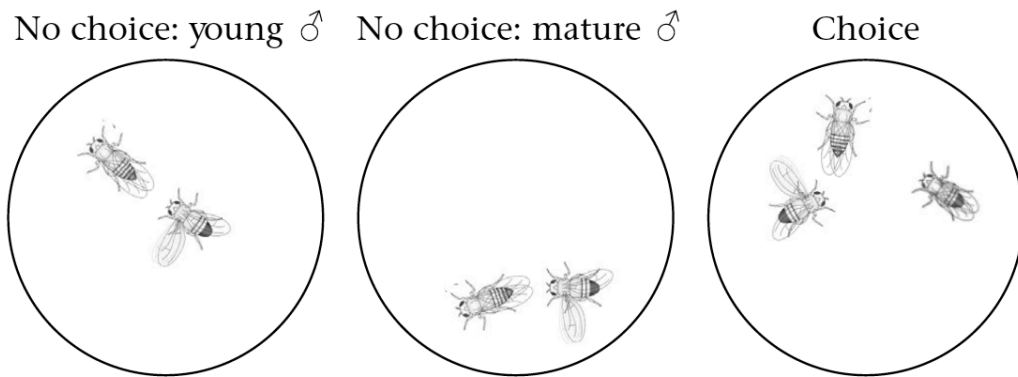
1300 **Figure 3.5**

1301 Proportion of small and large males that mated in no-choice ($N_{\text{small}}=123$, $N_{\text{large}}=122$) and
1302 choice trials ($N_{\text{choice}}=122$).

1303 **3.5 Male age, courtship interference and mating success**

1304

1305 This set of experiments was analogous to the set of experiments above except that males
1306 varied by age rather than size (Fig. 3.6). We used males that were 1 and 4 days old, as males
1307 of both of these ages are sexually mature and readily court and mate with females (Dukas
1308 & Baxter 2014; Baxter et al. 2015a; Baxter & Dukas 2017). First, we predicted that 4-day-
1309 old males (hereafter mature males) would spend more time courting females than 1-day-
1310 old males (hereafter young males) in the choice than in the no-choice trials. Second, we
1311 predicted higher takeover rates by mature than young males. Finally, we predicted a higher
1312 relative mating success by mature than young males in the choice than no-choice trials.



1313

1314 **Figure 3.6**

1315 Diagram of the protocols for young vs. mature male courtship interference and mating
1316 success. In the courtship experiment, the females were sexually immature, whereas in the
1317 competitive mating experiment, they were sexually mature.

1318 *3.5.1 Courtship interference - Methods*

1319 In no-choice trials, we placed either a young or mature male with an immature
1320 virgin female ($N_{\text{young}}=28$, $N_{\text{mature}}=30$). In the choice trials, we placed one young and one
1321 mature male with an immature female in the arena simultaneously ($N_{\text{choice}}=58$). In order to
1322 differentiate between males in the choice treatment, we coloured males with pink and blue
1323 fluorescent powder while counterbalancing male colour with male age.

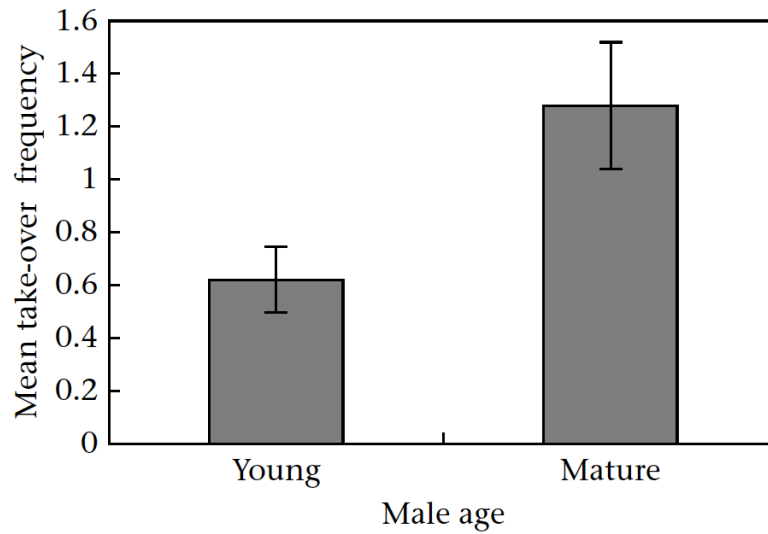
1324 After placing the flies in the arena, we began video recording for 15 minutes. Later,
1325 observers blind to male age scored the videos. In the no-choice condition, observers
1326 recorded the duration of courtship, and who terminated each courtship bout. In the choice
1327 condition, observers recorded the duration of courtship and the number of courtship
1328 takeovers performed by each male.

1329

1330 *3.5.2 Courtship interference – Results*

1331 In the choice trials, mature males performed significantly more courtship takeovers
1332 than young males (GLMM with negative binomial distribution, $\chi_1^2=15.6$, $N=58$, $p<0.001$;
1333 Fig. 3.7. Across both trial types, mature males spent significantly more time courting than
1334 young males (GLMM with gamma distribution and inverse link function, $\chi_1^2=12.4$, $N=116$,
1335 $p<0.001$; Fig. 3.8). There was a significant interaction between male age and trial type,
1336 meaning that there was a larger difference between the courtship duration of mature vs.
1337 young males in the choice than no-choice trials ($\chi_1^2=6.06$, $N=116$, $p<0.05$; Fig. 3.8). That
1338 is, mature males had a competitive courtship advantage over young males.

1339 In the no-choice trials, females terminated courtship with mature males more
1340 frequently than they terminated courtship with young males, but this difference did not
1341 reach significance (GLMM with negative binomial distribution, $\chi_1^2= 2.41$, $N=58$, $p=0.12$).

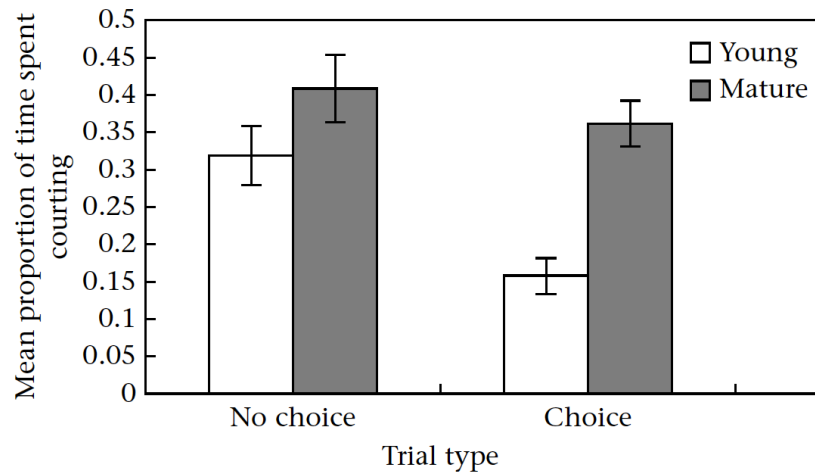


1342

1343 **Figure 3.7**

1344 Mean \pm SE takeover frequency for young and mature males in the choice trials ($N_{\text{choice}}=58$).

1345



1346

1347 **Figure 3.8**

1348 Mean \pm SE proportion of time males spent courting a female in no-choice ($N_{1\text{-day-old}}=28$, $N_{4\text{-day-old}}=30$) and choice trials ($N_{\text{choice}}=58$).

1349

1350 *3.5.3 Mating success in choice vs. no-choice trials - Methods*

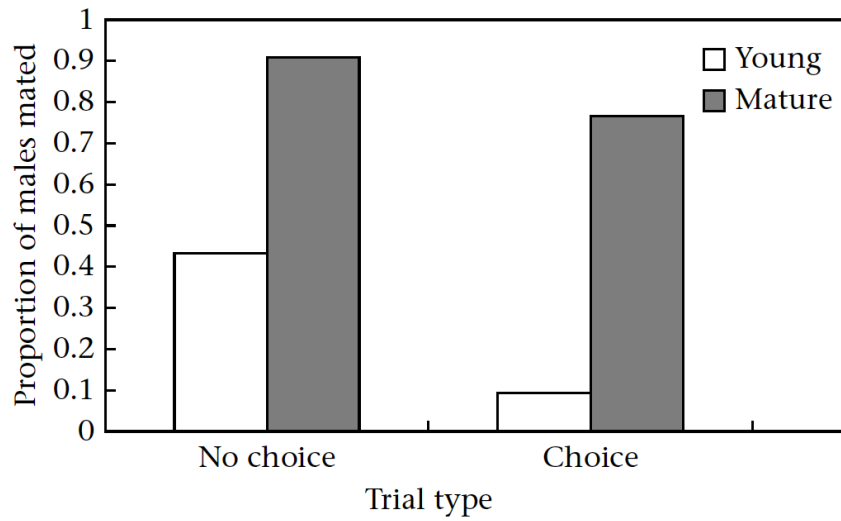
1351 In the previous experiment, we used sexually immature females to assess male
1352 courtship effort and competitive ability. In order to assess how competitive courtship ability
1353 translates into mating success, we repeated the same experiment with mature virgin
1354 females, again conducting no-choice and choice trials (Fig. 3.6). In the no-choice trials, we
1355 placed one male (young or mature) with a mature virgin female (4 days old) in the arena
1356 ($N_{\text{young}}=120$, $N_{\text{mature}}=120$). In the choice trials we placed two males (one young and one
1357 mature) with a mature virgin female in the arena ($N_{\text{choice}}=120$). Observers blind to male age
1358 scanned the arenas for matings. Trials ended once mating occurred, or after 30 minutes had
1359 passed.

1360 We used a binomial test to compare the observed proportions of matings in the
1361 choice treatment to the expected proportions, which were calculated based on mating
1362 success in the no-choice treatment by young and mature males (IBM Corp., 2011).

1363

1364 *3.5.4 Mating success in choice vs. no-choice trials - Results*

1365 The proportion of mature males mated in the choice trials was significantly larger
1366 than that expected from the no-choice trials (binomial test, $N_{\text{no-choice}}=240$, $N_{\text{choice}}=120$
1367 $p<0.001$; Fig. 3.9).



1368

1369 **Figure 3.9**

1370 Proportion of young and mature males that mated in no-choice ($N_{1\text{-day-old}}=120$, $N_{4\text{-day-old}}=120$) and choice trials ($N_{\text{choice}}=120$).

1372 **3.6 True-choice vs. classical choice**

1373

1374 The experiments above indicated that subtle interactions between males could determine
1375 the outcomes of mate choice tests. That is, data attributed to female mate choice under the
1376 classical choice protocol can actually be driven by male-male competition for access to
1377 females. There is thus an obvious need for an additional protocol that eliminates male-male
1378 competition from the choice protocol. To address this requirement, we developed a new
1379 apparatus that allows a female to freely travel between two compartments, each housing
1380 one male, and then choose her mate. We refer to this set up as ‘true-choice’. We then
1381 compared the mating success of young and mature males under the choice protocol and
1382 under the true-choice setup. Based on the data above (Figs. 3.6 – 3.9), we expected higher
1383 relative mating success by mature than young males in the choice than true-choice trials.

1384

1385 *3.6.1 Methods*

1386 We constructed two types of arenas for the true-choice and choice trials (Fig. 3.10).
1387 The true-choice arena was a novel apparatus inspired by Byrne et al. (2008). It had two
1388 adjacent rectangular compartments that isolated the males from each other. Each
1389 compartment was 1 x 1 x 4 cm in size. In the shared wall of the two compartments were 24
1390 holes approximately 0.95 mm in diameter. The holes were small enough to prevent large
1391 flies (in this case males) from passing between compartments, but at the same time large
1392 enough to allow small flies (in this case small females) to pass through and visit both
1393 compartments. The choice arena, which allowed for simultaneous female choice and male-
1394 male competition, consisted of a single compartment 1 x 1 x 6.5 cm in size. Both arenas
1395 contained standard food to the 1.5 cm mark from one end and sealed with a foam plug at
1396 the other. After adding food, the space in the choice arena was twice the length of the true-
1397 choice arena so that the total space the female could explore in both arenas was equivalent.

1398 In fruit flies, females are typically slightly larger than males. To develop small
1399 females, we reared them at a density of approximately 250 eggs per 1 ml of standard fly
1400 medium (Byrne et al. 2008; Baxter et al. 2015a). Although small females are less attractive

1401 than large females as shown by less courtship from males, young and mature males court
1402 small females with equal intensity (Baxter et al. 2015a). To develop large males, we reared
1403 them at a density of 100 eggs per 50 ml of medium.

1404 We wanted females to have ample time to interact with each male before choosing
1405 to mate with one of them. To this end, we placed sexually immature, recently eclosed
1406 females in the arenas with a recently eclosed male and a 3-day-old male. This allowed the
1407 females to have an extended period of interaction with both males before becoming
1408 sexually mature, approximately 12 hours later. Once females became sexually mature, they
1409 were able to make informed choices of whether to mate with the now 1-day-old (young) or
1410 4-day-old (mature) male. In the true-choice arena, females started half of the trials with the
1411 mature, and half with the young males, and this was counterbalanced with her starting on
1412 the left or right side of the arena.

1413 We ran trials in humidified chambers at 25°C and 80 ± 10% relative humidity with
1414 bright ambient light. Trials lasted 48 hours beginning when we placed flies into the arenas.
1415 We recorded the arenas with iPods using the time-lapse application OhSnap! to record a
1416 single frame every three minutes. Observers blind to male age scored the first mating of
1417 each female from the resulting time-lapse photos. A mating was counted if the same male
1418 was mounting a female for 3-5 consecutive frames. This was an adequate measure as
1419 matings in *D. melanogaster* typically last for about 15 minutes (Ashburner 1989).

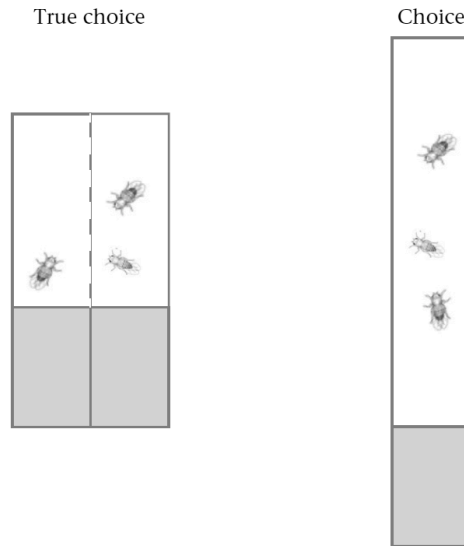
1420 We excluded from the data two types of trials. First, we removed true-choice trials
1421 where females did not receive courtship by both males before mating (N=16) as this did
1422 not constitute a choice by the female. Second, we excluded all trials that did not result in
1423 mating (N_{choice}=11, N_{true-choice}=7). This left us with a sample size of 157 choice trials and
1424 124 true-choice trials. We split the trials into six 8-hour blocks to assess the proportion of
1425 matings in each trial type across time. We analyzed the data in R (R-Core-Team 2014)
1426 using the gee package version 4.13-19 (Carey et al. 2015). We used a generalized
1427 estimating equation (GEE) with a binomial distribution to assess the cumulative proportion
1428 of matings attained by mature males across the 8-hour blocks, with arena ID as the subject
1429 ID (for repeated samplings of the same arena across the 8-hour blocks) and 8-hour block

1430 as an ordered factor. We predicted that the opportunity for male-male interactions would
1431 result in a larger proportion of matings attained by the mature males in the choice than in
1432 the true-choice trials.

1433

1434 *3.6.2 Results*

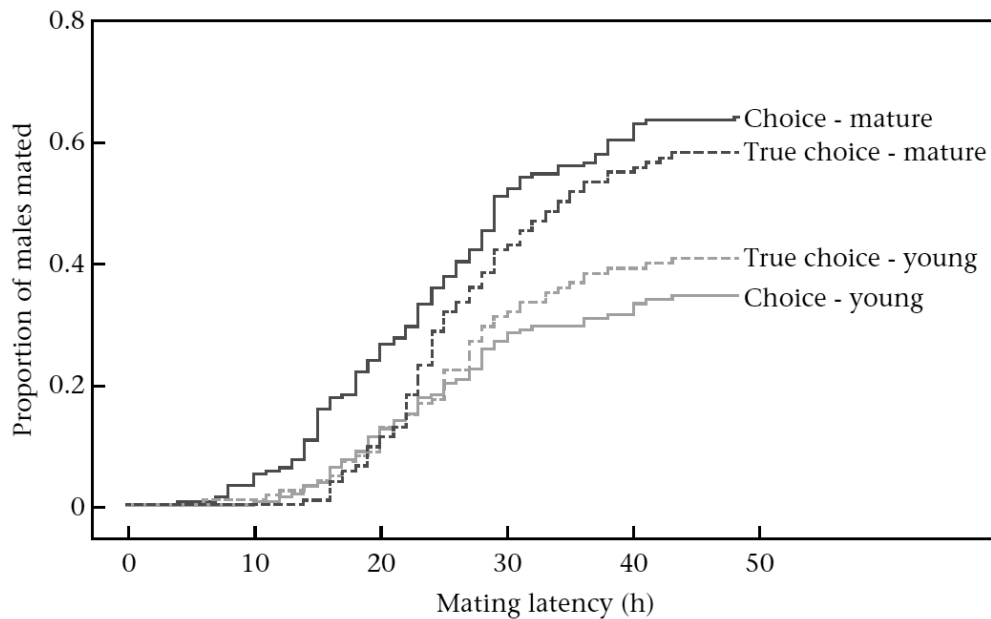
1435 The mature males had a higher proportion of matings in the choice treatment than
1436 in the true-choice treatment (GEE with binomial distribution, robust $z=2.15$, $N=281$,
1437 $p<0.05$; Fig. 3.11).



1438

1439 **Figure 3.10**

1440 Diagram of the protocol for choice vs. true-choice treatments. Note that males have a dark
1441 posterior, but, due to the experimental manipulation, they are larger than females.
1442



1443

1444 **Figure 3.11**

1445 Proportion of matings between young and mature males over time in the choice (N=157)
1446 and true-choice (N=124) treatments.

1447 **3.7 Discussion**

1448

1449 We documented robust but subtle aggressive interactions between males that affected their
1450 ability to court females: males persistently interfered with each other's courtship,
1451 attempting and often succeeding in taking over courtship from another male (Fig. 3.1). That
1452 is, we believe that the classical characterization of fruit fly mating system under high
1453 density as scramble competition (Spieth 1974; Partridge et al. 1987) should be revised to
1454 interference competition. Furthermore, we think that careful observations will necessitate
1455 reclassifying many other apparent scramble competition cases (Thornhill & Alcock 1983;
1456 Shuker & Simmons 2014) as interference competition. In fruit flies, we and others had
1457 failed to notice courtship takeover in many previous experiments using a choice protocol,
1458 which, in spite of its name, cannot distinguish between choice by females and subtle male-
1459 male competition. To detect the courtship takeovers, we required close-up video
1460 recordings. Once we established the protocol for measuring courtship takeovers, we could
1461 quantify highly replicable patterns of large males performing more takeovers than small
1462 males (Fig. 3.3), and of mature males performing more takeovers than young males (Fig.
1463 3.7). Our results are consistent with data on fruit fly aggression in the context of resource
1464 defence polygyny, where large males outcompete small males (Hoffmann 1987; Asahina
1465 2017) and mature males win over young males (Baxter & Dukas 2017).

1466 Courtship interference is known in a variety of taxa (Wong & Candolin 2005). For
1467 example, although females appear to choose among males occupying a lek, courtship
1468 interruption is prevalent (Foster 1983). In the Guianan cock of the rock (*Rupicola rupicola*),
1469 males that disrupted other males' courtship or copulation had a higher mating success, and
1470 males that engaged in more aggressive and persistent interference were more likely to mate
1471 with the females they interrupted (Trail 1985). In the water boatman (*Sigara falleni*), males
1472 frequently engaged in overt aggression, interrupting courtship and mounting attempts. In
1473 choice trials dominated by male courtship interference, large males with smaller palae for
1474 their size had the highest mating success while in no-choice trials, large males with large
1475 relative palae had the highest mating rates (Candolin & Tregenza 2004). Finally, in the

1476 Pacific blue-eye (*Pseudomugil signifier*), courtship bouts under no-choice were much
1477 longer than under choice trials. While dominant and subordinate males were equally likely
1478 to disrupt each other's courtship, dominant males monopolized courtship in the choice trials
1479 (Wong 2004). An important difference between our findings and previous reports on
1480 courtship interference is that we have documented subtle courtship interference, which
1481 could be revealed only through careful analyses of video recordings. Such covert male-
1482 male interactions may be prevalent, with their effects on sexual selection underappreciated.

1483 Our three sets of experiments revealed a complex pattern, which most likely reflects
1484 the actual intricacy of the dynamics that determine mating success. In a choice protocol
1485 involving small and large males and an immature female, large males took over courtship
1486 (Fig. 3.1) four times more often than small males (Fig. 3.3). Remarkably, however, in spite
1487 of the persistent interference from large males, the small males were determined at
1488 resuming courting females. This is reflected in the fact that, in the no-choice trials, females
1489 received courtship during less than half of the trial duration (the average of the 2 left bars
1490 in Fig. 3.4) compared to about 0.85 of the trial duration in the choice trials (the sum of the
1491 2 right bars in Fig. 3.4). Thus the persistence of the small males resulted in no relative loss
1492 in mating success in the choice compared to no-choice trials (Fig. 3.5). This indicates that
1493 there is no simple positive correlation between courtship interference and either the
1494 proportion of time spent courting, or mating success, at least not under our controlled
1495 experimental conditions.

1496 The outcomes of matches between young and mature males were different from
1497 those of the small and large males (Figs. 3.6–3.9). Here mature males took over courtship
1498 twice as often as young males (Fig. 3.7) and this resulted in the mature males spending over
1499 twice as much time as young males courting females under the choice conditions compared
1500 to only a small courtship bias under no-choice (Fig. 3.8). Moreover, courtship interference
1501 translated into a significant mating advantage for mature over young males in choice than
1502 in no-choice settings (Fig. 3.9). We should note that, because we also recorded and reported
1503 in the text females' frequencies of terminating courtship, we know that females did not
1504 decamp more often when courted either by small than by large males, or by young than by

1505 mature males. There was even a marginally significant tendency of females to decamp more
1506 often when courted by mature than by young males.

1507 The most likely explanation for the distinct effects of courtship interference on the
1508 relative mating success of small and young males (Fig. 3.5 vs. Fig. 3.9) is the age difference
1509 between the males. Our previous work on the life history of aggression indicated that,
1510 compared to young males, mature males that have been deprived of females show a higher
1511 motivation to gain matings, which translates into higher levels of aggression in male-male
1512 contexts over resources, and greater tendencies by males to persistently pursue females
1513 with low receptivity and to engage in forced copulations (Baxter & Dukas 2017). It is likely
1514 that the small, mature males responded to courtship interference by persistently resuming
1515 courtship when the large males discontinued their female pursuit, whereas the young males
1516 responded to the more aggressive mature males by retreating.

1517 Finally, although our data revealed robust, subtle male contest, and suggested that
1518 it could influence male mating success in the context of the female choice protocol, the data
1519 did not show a direct effect of courtship interference on mating success. To test for such
1520 direct influence, we had to fully separate between male contest and female choice, a
1521 requirement that the traditional choice and no-choice protocols do not accomplish. To this
1522 end, we developed a novel protocol, true-choice, which met that requirement (Fig. 3.10).
1523 Using the true-choice protocol, we found that male-male interactions indeed affected
1524 mating success (Fig. 3.11). We think that true-choice protocols should replace choice
1525 protocols in future studies assessing traits determining mating success in species where
1526 physical contact is essential for courting and mate assessment.

1527 We noted some difficulties with the true-choice protocol. Male harassment of
1528 females is prevalent in settings where females cannot escape pursuing males (Dukas &
1529 Jongsma 2012; Baxter & Dukas 2017). We thus think that the perfect true-choice protocol
1530 should provide females with the option of evading males. Our preferred prototype for the
1531 true-choice apparatus had a central female compartment and two side compartments for
1532 each male, as this design provides females with a male-free shelter. The weakness of that
1533 apparatus, however, was that we had to drop a high proportion of trials in which females

1534 mated prior to assessing both males. Another possible concern is the fact that the true-
1535 choice protocol required us to reverse the typical pattern of females being larger than males.
1536 Such size reversal, however, may occur in nature in cases where some females have a high-
1537 density larval environment while some males happen to develop at low density. We and
1538 others have successfully used small females previously. While males find small females
1539 less attractive than large females as indicated by lesser courtship and mating preference
1540 (Byrne & Rice 2006; Baxter et al. 2015a), both small-female behaviour and males'
1541 responses to them seem natural.

1542 We think that our data indicating covert courtship interference should be considered
1543 in future mate choice studies. Distinguishing between female choice and male-male
1544 interactions is important only if there is a conflict between the sexes such that traits
1545 preferred by females are distinct from traits selected through male-male contests
1546 (Qvarnström & Forsgren 1998; Arnqvist & Rowe 2005). For example, if both male
1547 competition and female choice select for larger body size as is the case in many studies
1548 (Hunt et al. 2009), then separating the mechanisms may not be crucial. It is likely, however,
1549 that research focusing on sexually selected traits utilized by males and females under
1550 realistic settings will reveal distinct roles of traits affecting male competition and females
1551 choice. While such work has been encouraged in the past (Lande & Arnold 1983; Hunt et
1552 al. 2009), we still lack sufficient data. We suggest that future research on the topic employ
1553 true female choice protocols, which allow for female assessment of males and choice while
1554 fully eliminating male competition.

1555

1556 **3.8 Acknowledgments**

1557

1558 We thank L. Dukas and R. Pusiak, M. Polak and two anonymous referees for comments on
1559 the manuscript, R. Barnett, M. Djebli, K. Orig, L. Salvo and S. Wickramasinghe for
1560 assistance, B. Bolker, J. Dushoff and I. Dworkin for statistical advise, and the Natural
1561 Sciences and Engineering Research Council of Canada, Canada Foundation for Innovation
1562 and Ontario Ministry of Research and Innovation for funding.

1563 **3.9 References**

1564

1565 Andersson, M. 1994. *Sexual Selection*. Princeton NJ: Princeton University Press.

1566 Arnqvist, G. & Rowe, L. 2005. *Sexual Conflict*. Princeton, N.J.: Princeton University Press.

1567 Asahina, K., Watanabe, K., Duistermars, B. J., Hoopfer, E., González, C. R., Eyjólfsson, E. A., Perona, P. & Anderson, D. J. 2014. Tachykinin-expressing neurons control

1568 male-specific aggressive arousal in *Drosophila*. *Cell*, 156, 221-235.

1570 Asahina, K. 2017. Neuromodulation and strategic action choice in *Drosophila* aggression.

1571 *Annual Review of Neuroscience*, 40, null.

1572 Ashburner, M. 1989. *Drosophila a Laboratory Handbook*. Cold Spring Harbor: Cold

1573 Spring Harbor Laboratory Press.

1574 Bangham, J., Chapman, T. & Partridge, L. 2002. Effects of body size, accessory gland and

1575 testis size on pre- and postcopulatory success in *Drosophila melanogaster*. *Animal*

1576 *Behaviour*, 64, 915-921.

1577 Bates, D., Maechler, M., Bolker, B. & Walker, S. 2014. lme4: Linear mixed-effects models

1578 using Eigen and S4. R package version 1.1-10, [http://CRAN.R-](http://CRAN.R-project.org/package=lme4)

1579 [project.org/package=lme4](http://CRAN.R-project.org/package=lme4).

1580 Baxter, C. M., Barnett, R. & Dukas, R. 2015a. Effects of age and experience on male mate

1581 choosiness. *Ethology*, 121, 353–363.

1582 Baxter, C. M., Barnett, R. & Dukas, R. 2015b. Aggression, mate guarding, and fitness in

1583 male fruit flies. *Animal Behaviour*, 109, 235-241.

1584 Baxter, C. M. & Dukas, R. 2017. Life history of aggression: effects of age and sexual

1585 experience on male aggression towards males and females. *Animal Behaviour*,

1586 123, 11-20.

1587 Bischoff, R. J., Gould, J. L. & Rubenstein, D. I. 1985. Tail size and female choice in the

1588 guppy (*Poecilia reticulata*). *Behavioral Ecology and Sociobiology*, 17, 253-255.

1589 Byrne, P. G. & Rice, W. R. 2006. Evidence for adaptive male mate choice in the fruit fly

1590 *Drosophila melanogaster*. *Proceedings of the Royal Society of London B-*

1591 *Biological Sciences*, 273, 917-922.

1592 Byrne, P. G., Rice, G. R. & Rice, W. R. 2008. Effect of a refuge from persistent male

1593 courtship in the *Drosophila* laboratory environment. *Integrative and Comparative*

1594 *Biology*, 48, E1-E7.

1595 Candolin, U. & Tregenza, T. 2004. Opposing selection on a sexually dimorphic trait

1596 through female choice and male competition in a water boatman. *Evolution*, 58,

1597 1861-1864.

1598 Carey, V. J., Lumley, T. & Ripley, B. 2015. gee: Generalized Estimation Equation solver,

1599 R package version 4.13-19. R package version 4.13-19. [https://CRAN.R-](https://CRAN.R-project.org/package=gee)

1600 [project.org/package=gee](https://CRAN.R-project.org/package=gee).

1601 Chen, S., Lee, A. Y., Bowens, N. M., Huber, R. & Kravitz, E. A. 2002. Fighting fruit flies:

1602 A model system for the study of aggression. *Proceedings of the National Academy*

1603 *of Sciences*, 99, 5664-5668.

1604 Coyne, J. A. & Orr, H. A. 2004. *Speciation*. Sunderland: Sinauer.

1605 Dougherty, L. R. & Shuker, D. M. 2015. The effect of experimental design on the

1606 measurement of mate choice: a meta-analysis. *Behavioral Ecology*, 26, 311-319.

- 1607 Dukas, R. 2005. Learning affects mate choice in female fruit flies. *Behavioral Ecology*, 16,
1608 800-804.
- 1609 Dukas, R. & Dukas, L. 2012. Learning about prospective mates in male fruit flies: effects
1610 of acceptance and rejection. *Animal Behaviour*, 84, 1427-1434.
- 1611 Dukas, R. & Jongsma, K. 2012. Costs to females and benefits to males from forced
1612 copulations in fruit flies. *Animal Behaviour*, 84, 1177–1182.
- 1613 Dukas, R. & Baxter, C. M. 2014. Mate choosiness in young male fruit flies. *Behavioral*
1614 *Ecology*, 25, 549-552.
- 1615 Dukas, R. & Scott, A. 2015. Fruit fly courtship: the female perspective. *Current Zoology*,
1616 61, 1008–1014.
- 1617 Emlen, S. T. & Oring, L. W. 1977. Ecology, sexual selection, and the evolution of mating
1618 systems. *Science*, 197, 215-223.
- 1619 Eriksson, D. & Wallin, L. 1986. Male bird song attracts females: A field experiment.
1620 *Behavioral Ecology and Sociobiology*, 19, 297-299.
- 1621 Evans, M. R. & Hatchwell, B. J. 1992a. An experimental study of male adornment in the
1622 scarlet-tufted malachite sunbird: II. The role of the elongated tail in mate choice
1623 and experimental evidence for a handicap. *Behavioral Ecology and Sociobiology*,
1624 29, 421-427.
- 1625 Evans, M. R. & Hatchwell, B. J. 1992b. An experimental study of male adornment in the
1626 scarlet-tufted malachite sunbird: I. The role of pectoral tufts in territorial defence.
1627 *Behavioral Ecology and Sociobiology*, 29, 413-419.
- 1628 Ferveur, J.-F. 2010. *Drosophila* female courtship and mating behaviors: sensory signals,
1629 genes, neural structures and evolution. *Current Opinion In Neurobiology*, 20, 764-
1630 769.
- 1631 Foster, M. S. 1983. Disruption, dispersion, and dominance in lek-breeding birds. *The*
1632 *American Naturalist*, 122, 53-72.
- 1633 Fox, J. & Weisberg, S. 2011. An R Companion to Applied Regression. Thousand Oaks:
1634 SAGE Inc.
- 1635 Gilchrist, A. S. & Partridge, L. 1999. A comparison of the genetic basis of wing size
1636 divergence in three parallel body size clines of *Drosophila melanogaster*.
1637 *Genetics*, 153, 1775-1787.
- 1638 Hoffmann, A. A. 1987. Territorial encounters between *Drosophila* males of different sizes.
1639 *Animal Behaviour*, 35, 1899-1901.
- 1640 Hoffmann, A. A. & Cacoyianni, Z. 1990. Territoriality in *Drosophila melanogaster* as a
1641 conditional strategy. *Animal Behaviour*, 40, 526-537.
- 1642 Hughes, S. M., Harrison, M. A. & Gallup, G. G. 2007. Sex differences in romantic kissing
1643 among college students: An evolutionary perspective. *Evolutionary Psychology*,
1644 5, 147470490700500310.
- 1645 Hunt, J., Breuker, C. J., Sadowski, J. A. & Moore, A. J. 2009. Male–male competition,
1646 female mate choice and their interaction: determining total sexual selection.
1647 *Journal of Evolutionary Biology*, 22, 13-26.
- 1648 Johnston, R. E. 2003. Chemical communication in rodents: from pheromones to individual
1649 recognition. *Journal of Mammalogy*, 84, 1141-1162.
- 1650 Lack, D. 1940. Courtship feeding in birds. *The Auk*, 57, 169-178.

- 1651 Lande, R. & Arnold, S. J. 1983. The measurement of selection on correlated characters.
1652 *Evolution*, 37, 1210-1226.
- 1653 Long, C. E., Markow, T. A. & Yaeger, P. 1980. Relative male age, fertility, and competitive
1654 mating success in *Drosophila melanogaster*. *Behavior Genetics*, 10, 163-170.
- 1655 Lüpold, S., Manier, M. K., Ala-Honkola, O., Belote, J. M. & Pitnick, S. 2011. Male
1656 *Drosophila melanogaster* adjust ejaculate size based on female mating status,
1657 fecundity, and age. *Behavioral Ecology*, 22, 184-191.
- 1658 Markow, T. A. 1988. Reproductive behavior of *Drosophila melanogaster* and *D.*
1659 *nigrospiracula* in the field and in the laboratory. *Journal of Comparative*
1660 *Psychology*, 102, 169-173.
- 1661 Partridge, L., Ewing, A. & Chandler, A. 1987. Male size and mating success in *Drosophila-*
1662 *melanogaster* - the roles of male and female behavior. *Animal Behaviour*, 35, 555-
1663 562.
- 1664 Qvarnström, A. & Forsgren, E. 1998. Should females prefer dominant males? *Trends in*
1665 *Ecology & Evolution*, 13, 498-501.
- 1666 R-Core-Team. 2014. R: A language and environment for statistical computing. Vienna,
1667 Austria. URL <http://www.R-project.org>.
- 1668 Radinovsky, S. & Krantz, G. 1962. The use of Fluon to prevent the escape of stored-product
1669 insects from glass containers. *Journal of Economic Entomology*, 55, 815-816.
- 1670 Rice, W. R., Stewart, A. D., Morrow, E. H., Linder, J. E., Orteiza, N. & Byrne, P. G. 2006.
1671 Assessing sexual conflict in the *Drosophila melanogaster* laboratory model
1672 system. *Philosophical Transactions of the Royal Society B: Biological Sciences*,
1673 361, 287-299.
- 1674 Ryan, M. J. 1980. Female mate choice in a neotropical frog. *Science*, 209, 523-525.
- 1675 Shuker, D. & Simmons, L. 2014. *The Evolution of Insect Mating Systems*. Oxford Oxford
1676 University Press.
- 1677 Spieth, H. T. 1974. Courtship behavior in *Drosophila*. *Annual Review of Entomology*, 19,
1678 383-406.
- 1679 Thornhill, R. & Alcock, J. 1983. *The evolution of insect mating systems*. Cambridge, Mass.:
1680 Harvard University Press.
- 1681 Trail, P. W. 1985. Courtship disruption modifies mate choice in a lek-breeding bird.
1682 *Science*, 227, 778-780.
- 1683 Wigby, S., Perry, J. C., Kim, Y.-H. & Sirot, L. K. 2016. Developmental environment
1684 mediates male seminal protein investment in *Drosophila melanogaster*.
1685 *Functional Ecology*, 30, 410-419.
- 1686 Wlodarski, R. & Dunbar, R. I. M. 2014. What's in a kiss? The effect of romantic kissing on
1687 mate desirability. *Evolutionary Psychology*, 12, 147470491401200114.
- 1688 Wong, B. 2004. Male competition is disruptive to courtship in the Pacific blue-eye. *Journal*
1689 *of Fish Biology*, 65, 333-341.
- 1690 Wong, B. B. M. & Candolin, U. 2005. How is female mate choice affected by male
1691 competition? *Biological Reviews*, 80, 559-571.
- 1692 Zuk, M., Johnson, K., Thornhill, R. & Ligon, J. D. 1990. Mechanisms of female choice in
1693 red jungle fowl. *Evolution*, 44, 477-485.
- 1694

1695 **CHAPTER 4 – AGGRESSION, MATE GUARDING, AND FITNESS IN MALE**
1696 **FRUIT FLIES**

1697

1698 Baxter, C. M., Barnett, R. & Dukas, R. (2015) Aggression, mate guarding, and fitness in
1699 male fruit flies. *Animal Behaviour*. 109: 235–241.

1700

1701 **4.1 Abstract**

1702

1703 Aggression is a central trait affecting fitness, which has been well studied in many animals.
1704 As a part of a research program integrating mechanisms and fitness consequences of
1705 aggression, we examined the adaptive functions of antagonistic interactions in fruit flies
1706 (*Drosophila melanogaster*), a species in which aggression has been studied primarily in the
1707 context of territorial behaviour. In our experiments, males at an attractive food patch were
1708 more aggressive towards other males when in the presence of their recent mates than with
1709 females mated with other males. Furthermore, while recently mated males accompanied by
1710 their mates were more aggressive than virgin males, recently mated males and virgin males
1711 showed similar levels of aggression in the presence of females mated with other males.
1712 When we allowed focal males to mate inside experimental arenas and then added intruder
1713 males, the intruder males spent less time on the food patch, remated with the resident
1714 females at lower frequencies, and fathered a smaller proportion of offspring when the focals
1715 males remained in the arenas than when we removed the focal males. Our results reveal a
1716 novel adaptive function of aggression in fruit flies: in addition to fighting to defend
1717 attractive food sources that attract prospective mates, males rely on aggression to guard
1718 their mates, and such mate guarding enhances their fitness.

1719

1720 **Key words:** aggression; *Drosophila melanogaster*; fighting; fruit flies; mate guarding;
1721 resource-defence polygyny; territorial behaviour

1722 **4.2 Introduction**

1723

1724 Aggression has long been recognized as a primary trait influencing fitness, especially in
1725 males, who often fight for territories and prospective mates (Darwin 1871; Howard 1920).
1726 Fruit flies (*Drosophila melanogaster*) have recently been adopted for a close examination
1727 of the genetics and neurobiology of aggression (Chen et al. 2002; Dierick & Greenspan
1728 2006; Zwarts et al. 2011; Alekseyenko et al. 2014). Because fruit flies are also highly
1729 amenable for behavioural, ecological and evolutionary research, we have a unique
1730 opportunity for integrating the rapidly accumulating knowledge about the mechanisms that
1731 control the varieties of aggressive behaviours with their functional aspects.

1732 Since the first experimental analysis of fruit fly aggression (Dow & Schilcher 1975),
1733 the primary focus in laboratory protocols has been on aggression in the context of territorial
1734 behaviour (Hoffmann 1987a; Chen et al. 2002; Dierick & Greenspan 2006; Certel &
1735 Kravitz 2012). The limited field work is consistent with the notion that male aggression
1736 serves for defending fruits frequented by prospective mates (Markow 1988). Male
1737 aggression, however, can also contribute to other activities such as mate guarding. Male
1738 fruit flies defend fruits that are highly suitable for feeding and oviposition. This means that
1739 females will most likely remain at their location of mating because after mating, they
1740 increase feeding and then initiate egg laying (Gioti et al. 2012). Remating, however, may
1741 be common (Harshman & Clark 1998) even though recently mated females have lower
1742 receptivity than virgin females (Chapman et al. 2003). Because there is a strong last male
1743 sperm precedence in fruit flies (Gromko et al. 1984; Price et al. 1999), the earlier male to
1744 mate will gain little paternity if his recent mate is quick to remate with another male. Thus
1745 males can benefit from guarding their mates that remain at the fruit they defend.

1746 Mate guarding has been well studied in many species (Alcock 1994; Simmons
1747 2001) and can be expressed in different ways. The most overt way involves cases such as
1748 in the dragonfly, *Pachydiplax longipennis*, in which the male remains close to the female
1749 after mating and during her oviposition and chases away approaching males (Sherman
1750 1983). Similarly, in Idaho ground squirrels (*Spermophilus brunneus*), the males stay close

1751 to their mates and attack approaching males. Field observations corroborated with genetic
1752 tests indeed indicated that males sired the pups born to females that they guarded (Sherman
1753 1989). An alternative form of mate guarding involves the males simply remaining mounted
1754 to females after copulation. This probably reduces the guarding males' need for using
1755 aggression. For example, male dung flies (*Scatophaga stercoraria*) remain mounted on the
1756 females after copulation for the duration of oviposition and thus physically block mounting
1757 by other males. Calculations indicate that such mate guarding is advantageous over the
1758 alternative strategy of searching for other females (Parker 1970). In soapberry bugs (*Jadera*
1759 *haematoloma*), copulations can last up to a few days even though sperm transfer takes only
1760 a few minutes. The males also remain close to the females during oviposition and remate
1761 if other males approach (Carroll 1991). Another form of mate guarding occurs in a variety
1762 of territorial birds. In addition to aggressively defending territories, the males closely
1763 follow their mates during their fertile period in order to reduce extra pair copulations
1764 (Birkhead 1979; Beasley 1996; Dickinson & Leonard 1996; Dickinson 1997; Chuang-
1765 Dobbs et al. 2001). For example, in house wrens (*Troglodytes aedon*), short-term
1766 experimental detention of males resulted in higher rates of extra pair copulations and
1767 paternity (Brylawski & Whittingham 2004).

1768 A recent study focusing on the mechanisms of aggression (Yuan et al. 2014) hinted
1769 at the possibility of mate guarding in fruit flies. Because the natural history of fruit flies
1770 described above implies that mate guarding may be beneficial under some realistic field
1771 settings, we conducted a set of experiments to critically test the role of aggression in mate
1772 guarding. Overall, our goal was to expand the scope of research on aggression in fruit flies
1773 in order to place it in a broader ecological perspective. This can help us understand both
1774 the mechanisms and fitness consequences of aggression in many animals. Specifically, we
1775 predicted (i) that males with their recent mates will be more aggressive than control males;
1776 (ii) that aggression in the context of mate guarding will decrease female remating frequency
1777 with other males; and (iii) that aggression in the context of mate guarding will increase the
1778 paternity of mate guards.

1779 **4.3 General methods**

1780

1781 We used descendants of wild-caught *Drosophila melanogaster* collected in several
1782 Southern Ontario localities in August, 2014. We housed the flies in population cages
1783 containing several hundred flies per cage. We kept the cages in an environmental chamber
1784 at 25°C and 60% relative humidity with a 12:12 hour light:dark cycle, with the lights
1785 turning on at 10:00 a.m. We reared the experimental flies at a low density of about 300
1786 eggs per 240-ml bottle containing 50 ml of standard fly medium made of water, sucrose,
1787 cornmeal, yeast, agar and methyl paraben.

1788 We sexed flies within 4 hours of eclosion to ensure virginity. We used gentle
1789 aspiration to sex and transfer the males into individual food vials, and CO₂ to sex and place
1790 females in groups of 20 per food vial. Each 40-ml vial contained 5 ml of the standard fly
1791 medium, and the females' vials also contained a dash of live yeast. At the time of testing
1792 all flies were 4 days old. We used small amounts of pink fluorescent powder to mark males
1793 to allow us to distinguish between males when two males shared an arena. Male colouring
1794 was counterbalanced with male treatment.

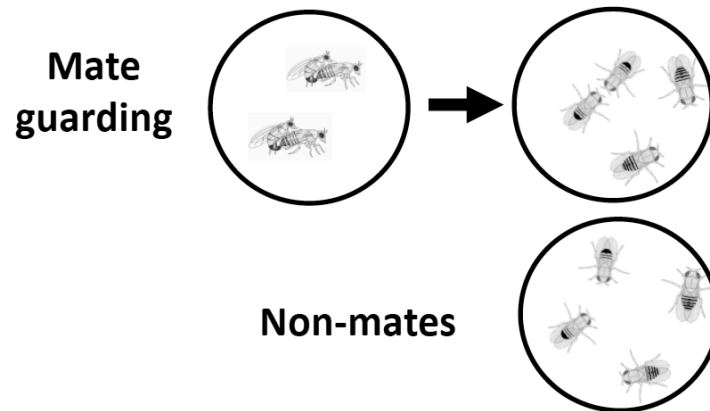
1795 We conducted all tests in cylindrical arenas made of Plexiglas 3 cm in diameter and
1796 2.5 cm high. To deter flies from climbing on the arenas' walls and ceilings, we coated the
1797 walls with Insect-a-Slip (Fluon; BioQuip) and the ceilings with Surfasil (Sigma). The floor
1798 of each arena had a piece of moist filter paper, and each arena contained a circular food
1799 patch 1.3 cm in diameter and 1.5 mm high covered with a live-yeast suspension. We
1800 recorded all trials using webcams (Logitech HD Pro C920 and iPad Air). Then observers
1801 blind to fly treatment scored the videos using Noldus software. We used generalized linear
1802 models (GLMs) when there were independent measures, and generalized estimating
1803 equations (GEEs) when there were repeated measures (IBM-Corp. 2011). Unless noted
1804 otherwise, the models assumed gamma distributions with log linked functions.

1805 **4.4 Aggression in the context of mate guarding**

1806

1807 *4.4.1 Methods*

1808 We began by examining whether males were more aggressive towards other males
1809 in the presence of their recent mates than were control males. We used a protocol modified
1810 from Yuan et al (2014). In the mate guarding treatment (n=30 arenas), we placed two focal
1811 males in an arena with two virgin females and allowed them to mate (Fig. 4.1). After both
1812 males had finished mating, we waited 10 min and then began video recording the arenas
1813 for 30 min. In the non-mates treatment (n=30 arenas), we placed one female and one male
1814 in each of two vials and allowed them to mate. Following mating, we discarded the males,
1815 placed the two mated females and two virgin focal males in an arena, let them acclimate
1816 for 10 min and then began video recording for 30 min (Fig. 4.1). From these videos,
1817 observers who were blind to the male treatment recorded the total duration of aggression,
1818 which included all occurrences of lunging, wing threat, high level fencing, holding, boxing,
1819 tussling and charging (Chen et al. 2002; Dierick & Greenspan 2006). To assess changes in
1820 aggression over time, we separated the 30-min trials into 6 blocks of 5 min. We predicted
1821 higher aggression levels in the mate-guarding than in the non-mates condition.



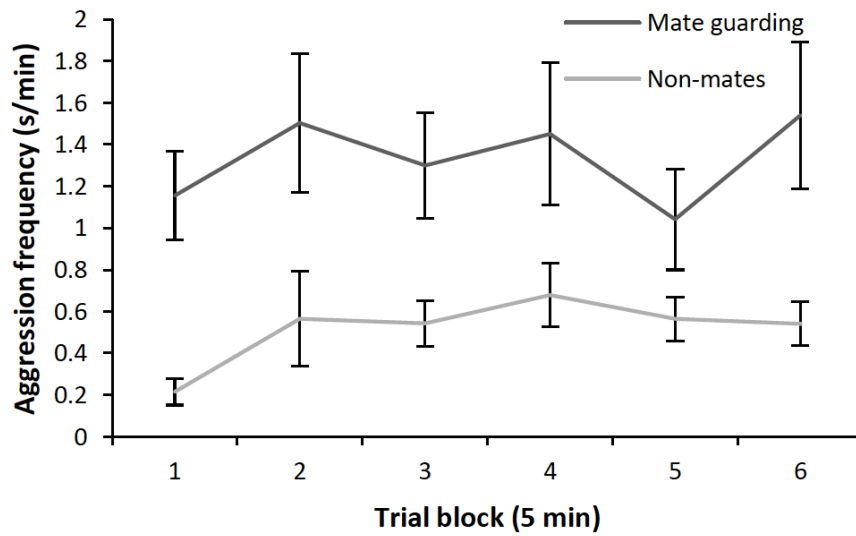
1822

1823 **Figure 4.1**

1824 The mate-guarding treatment involved two males in the presence of their recent mates
1825 whereas the non-mates treatment had two males together with females recently mated to
1826 other males (note that males are distinguished from females by their smaller size and the
1827 black tip of their abdomen).

1828 *4.4.2 Results*

1829 Males were significantly more aggressive towards other males in the mate guarding
1830 than in the non-mates treatment (GEE; Wald $\chi^2_1=20.7$, $n=60$, $P<0.001$, Fig. 4.2).
1831 Aggression varied significantly throughout the trials but the interactions between male type
1832 and time throughout the trials were not significant (GEE; Wald $\chi^2_5=18.3$, $n=60$, $P<0.005$
1833 and Wald $\chi^2_5=8.5$, $n=60$, $P=0.13$ respectively, Fig. 4.2).



1834

1835 **Figure 4.2**

1836 Mean \pm SE aggression frequency (s/min) per 5 min block per arena in the mate guarding
1837 and non-mates treatments (n = 60 arenas).

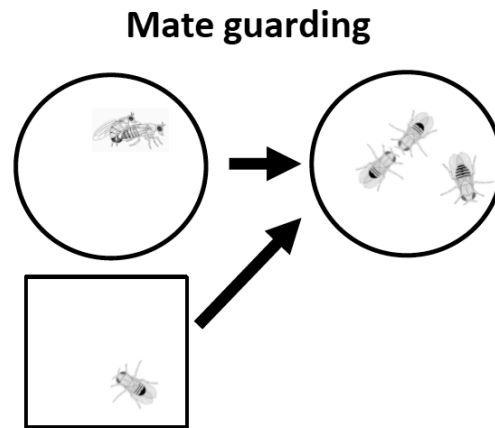
1838 **4.5 Aggression by mate guards vs. mated males**

1839

1840 *4.5.1 Methods*

1841 The previous experiment indicated that recently mated males in the presence of their
1842 mates are more aggressive than focal males in the presence of females recently mated to
1843 other males (Fig. 4.2). To assess the relative effects of mate guarding and recent mating on
1844 male aggression, we compared male aggression under two conditions. In the mate guarding
1845 treatment (n=30), we placed a focal male (guard) and a virgin female in an arena and
1846 allowed them to mate. Following mating, we added a virgin intruder male, allowed the flies
1847 to acclimate for 10 min and then began video recording for 30 min (Fig. 4.3). In the non-
1848 mate treatment (n=30), we placed one virgin female and one virgin male in each of two
1849 vials and allowed them to mate. Following mating, we discarded the female from one vial
1850 and the male from the other vial, and placed the focal male and non-mate female along with
1851 a virgin male in the arena, allowed them to acclimate for 10 min and then began video
1852 recording for 30 min (Fig. 4.4). Observers blind to treatment and male role recorded the
1853 duration of aggression performed by each male. We predicted more aggression by the guard
1854 males than by the intruder males in the mate guarding treatment and no difference in
1855 aggression levels between the focal males and other males in the non-mate condition. We
1856 had to exclude three replicates from the analysis because the male colours were not distinct
1857 in two replicates and the video file was corrupted in another replicate.

1858 Intruder males can respond to aggressive male guards by reducing further contact
1859 with these males (Fig. 1 in Yurkovic et al. 2006). This means that the duration of aggression
1860 may not be the best measure of male behaviour. We thus also quantified the relative
1861 dominance of the two males, measured by the time they spent on the food patch. Because
1862 our preliminary data indicated that the females spent much of their time on the food patch,
1863 we predicted a longer food-patch residency by the guard males than by the intruder males
1864 in the mate guarding treatment and no difference in food-patch residency between the focal
1865 males and other males in the control condition.

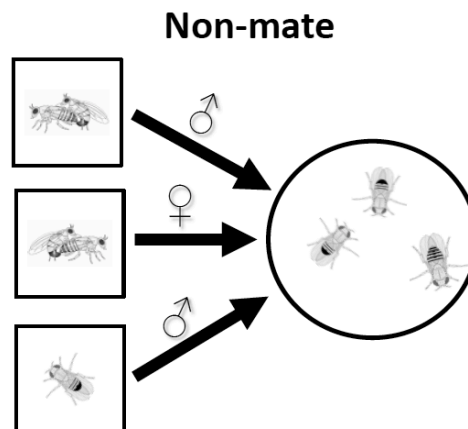


1866

1867 **Figure 4.3**

1868 In the mate-guarding treatment, we introduced an intruder male into an arena containing a
1869 guard male and his recent mate.

1870



1871

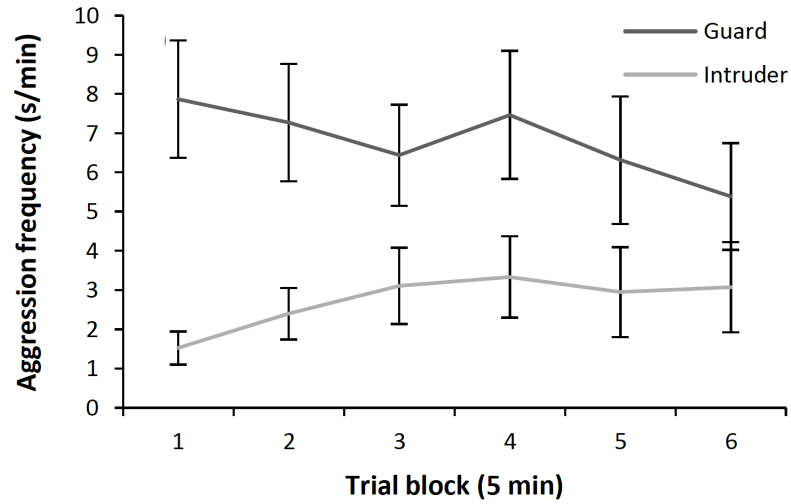
1872 **Figure 4.4**

1873 In the non-mate treatment, we placed in an arena a focal recently mated male, a female
1874 recently mated to another male, and another male.

1875 *4.5.2 Results*

1876 The male guards were more aggressive than the intruder males in the mate guarding
1877 treatment (GEE; Wald $\chi^2_1=5.3$, $n=58$, $P<0.05$, Fig. 4.5). Aggression did not vary
1878 significantly throughout the trials (GEE; Wald $\chi^2_5=5.5$, $n=58$, $P=0.4$) but the interaction
1879 between male type and time throughout the trials was significant (GEE; Wald $\chi^2_1=20.5$,
1880 $n=58$, $P<0.001$). In contrast, there was no difference in aggression levels between the focal
1881 males and the other males in the non-mate treatment (GEE; Wald $\chi^2_1=0.8$, $n=56$, $P=0.4$,
1882 Fig. 4.6). Both the levels of aggression throughout the trials (GEE; Wald $\chi^2_5=19.9$, $n=56$,
1883 $P<0.01$) and the interaction between male type and time throughout the trials were
1884 significant (GEE; Wald $\chi^2_5=14.1$, $n=56$, $P<0.02$).

1885 The food-patch residency data paralleled those of the male aggression. The male
1886 guards spent significantly more time on the food patch than the intruder males (GEE; Wald
1887 $\chi^2_1=5.8$, $n=58$, $P<0.02$, Fig. 4.7). Patch residency varied significantly throughout the trials
1888 (GEE; Wald $\chi^2_5=34$, $n=58$, $P<0.001$) and the interaction between male type and time
1889 throughout the trials was significant as well (GEE; Wald $\chi^2_5=19.5$, $n=58$, $P<0.002$). In
1890 contrast, there was no difference in the food-patch residency between the focal males and
1891 the other males in the non-mate treatment (GEE; Wald $\chi^2_1=0.6$, $n=56$, $P=0.4$, Fig. 4.8).
1892 Patch residency varied significantly throughout the trials (GEE; Wald $\chi^2_5=18.3$, $n=56$,
1893 $P<0.005$) but the interaction between male type and time throughout the trials was not
1894 significant (GEE; Wald $\chi^2_5=2.3$, $n=56$, $P=0.8$). The food-patch residency of females was
1895 nearly identical in the two treatments (33 ± 1.6 s/min with the mates present, 32.6 ± 1.7 s/min
1896 with non-mates present; GEE; Wald $\chi^2_1=0.01$, $n=57$, $P=0.9$) and did not vary throughout
1897 the 30 min trials (GEE; Wald $\chi^2_5=2.6$, $n=57$, $P=0.8$ and Wald $\chi^2_5=3.8$, $n=57$, $P=0.6$ for time
1898 throughout the trials and treatment by time interaction respectively).

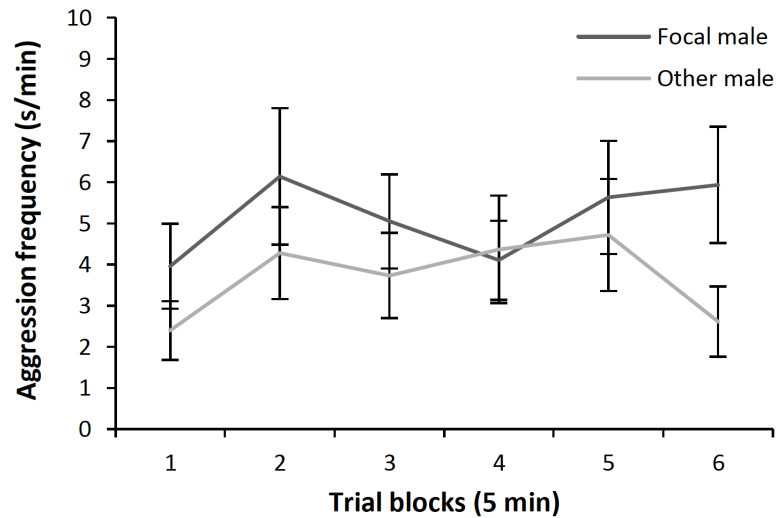


1899

1900 **Figure 4.5**

1901 The mean \pm SE aggression frequency (s/min) per 5 min block by each male in the mate
1902 guarding treatment (n = 58).

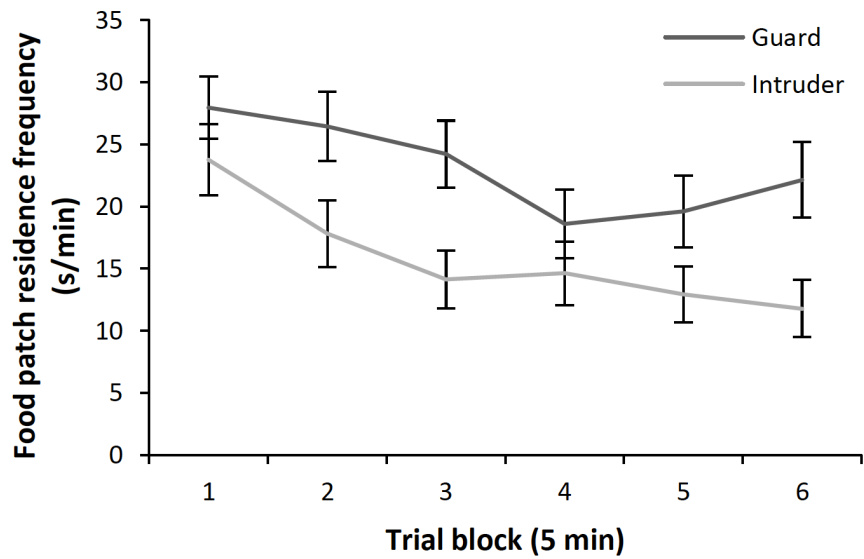
1903



1904

1905 **Figure 4.6**

1906 The mean \pm SE aggression frequency (s/min) per 5 min block by each male in the non-mate
1907 treatment (n = 56).

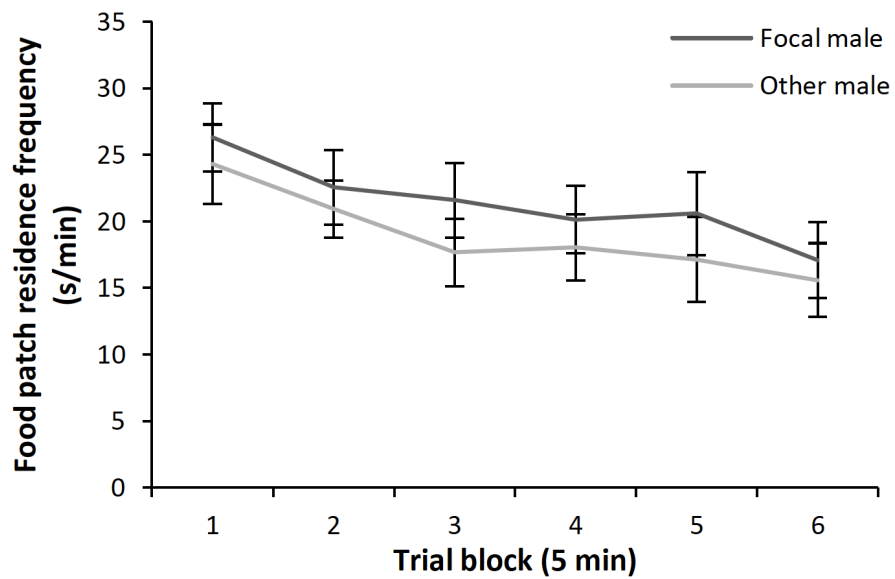


1908

1909 **Figure 4.7**

1910 Food-patch residency (s/min) per 5 minute block in the mate guarding treatment (n = 58).

1911



1912

1913 **Figure 4.8**

1914 Food-patch residency (s/min) per 5 minute block in the non-mate treatment (n = 56).

1915 **4.6 Fitness benefit of mate guarding**

1916

1917 *4.6.1 Methods*

1918 The above experiments indicated that mated males show elevated levels of
1919 aggression in the presence of their recent mates and intruder males. Such increased
1920 aggression can deter intruder males and thus ensure the mated male's paternity. Here we
1921 wished to critically test this possibility. Specifically, we predicted, first, that a female will
1922 be less likely to remate with intruder males when guarded by her recent mate than when
1923 her recent mate is removed, and, second, that a male remaining to guard his recent mate at
1924 a patch will father a higher proportion of her offspring than a male removed from the patch
1925 after mating.

1926 We conducted two experiments, the first monitoring only rematings and the second
1927 measuring both rematings and paternity. In the first experiment, we used the same wild-
1928 derived flies used in all previous experiments. We introduced one male and one female into
1929 each arena and allowed them to mate. Following mating, we randomly divided the arenas
1930 into two treatments. In the guard-present treatment, we kept the male (guard) and his recent
1931 mate and added an intruder into each arena (n=30). In the guard-absent treatment, we
1932 removed the mated male and introduced an intruder male into each arena (n=30). Observers
1933 blind to arena treatment scanned each arena for matings every 5 min for 4 hours. Because
1934 matings in *D. melanogaster* last about 15 min (Ashburner 1989), we could record all
1935 matings. As a supplementary information, the observers also recorded during each 5 min
1936 scan the locations of each fly (on or off the food patch), and the occurrence of courtship in
1937 each arena.

1938 In the second experiment, we used a combination of our regular wild-derived flies
1939 and wild-derived eye mutants with partially white eyes. We had identified the eye mutation
1940 in a few flies descended from our field-collected population and isolated them in a separate
1941 population cage maintained under the same conditions described above for the wild-type
1942 flies. Our analyses indicated that the eye mutation is autosomal recessive with simple
1943 Mendelian inheritance. The protocol was similar to that described above except for the

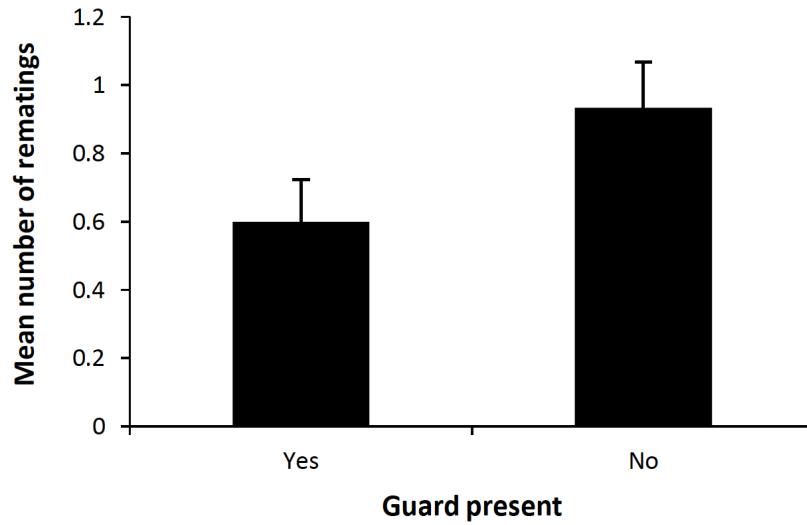
1944 following. We used eye mutant females, wild-type males as the guards and eye mutant
1945 males as the intruders. After the observation phase had finished, we removed the females
1946 from each arena and placed them individually in labelled food vials with a dash of live
1947 yeast. We transferred these mated females to fresh vials every other day until they no longer
1948 laid fertilized eggs. Observers blind to female treatment counted all wild-type and eye
1949 mutant adult offspring. We analyzed the remating data with generalized linear models with
1950 multinomial distributions and probit link functions and analyzed the progeny data and
1951 courtship and location data using generalized linear models with gamma distributions and
1952 log link functions.

1953

1954 *4.6.2 Results*

1955 In the first experiment, females' remating rates with intruders were lower in the
1956 presence than in the absence of guard males (GLM; Wald $\chi^2_1=3.3$, $n = 60$, $P=0.07$; Fig.
1957 4.9). Intruder males spent significantly less time on the food patch in the presence than in
1958 the absence of the guards (GLM; Wald $\chi^2_1= 46.3$, $n = 60$, $P < 0.001$; Fig. 4.10) but courted
1959 for similar durations in both treatments (GLM; Wald $\chi^2_1=0.026$, $n = 60$, $P=0.9$; Fig. 4.10).

1960 In the second experiment, females' remating rates with intruder males were also
1961 lower in the presence than in the absence of guard males (GLM; Wald $\chi^2_1=11.5$, $n = 60$, P
1962 < 0.001 ; Fig. 4.11). Intruder males spent less time both on the food patch and courting when
1963 the guard was present than when he was absent (GLM; Wald $\chi^2_1= 35.8$, $n = 60$, $P < 0.001$,
1964 and Wald $\chi^2_1=8.5$, $n = 60$, $P < 0.01$ respectively; Fig. 4.12). Finally, the guard males
1965 fathered a greater proportion of the females' offspring when they were present than when
1966 they were absent (GLM; Wald $\chi^2_1=4.3$, $n=59$, $P<0.05$; Fig. 4.13).

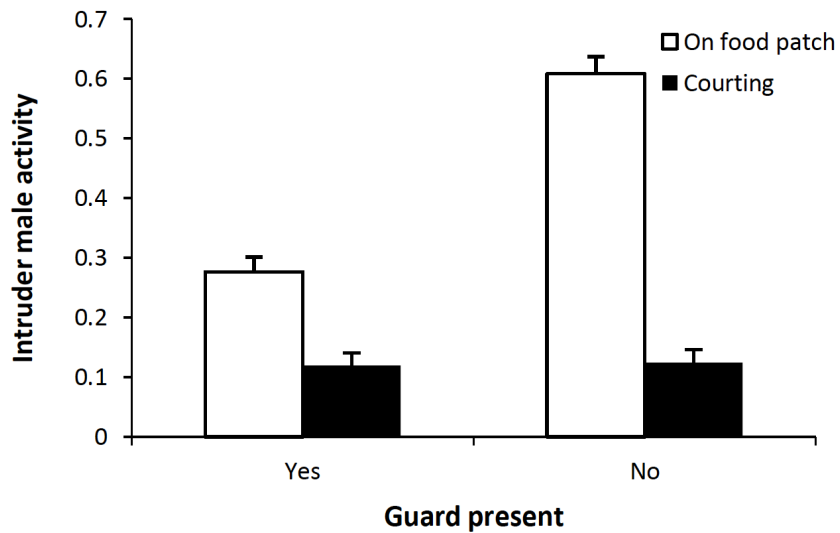


1967

1968 **Figure 4.9**

1969 Mean \pm SE number of rematings by intruder males when the guard male was either present
1970 or absent (n = 60 males).

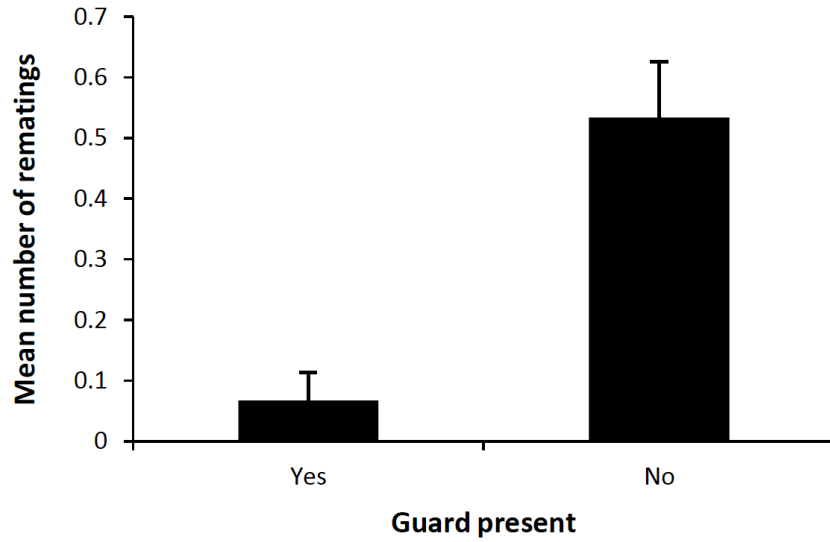
1971



1972

1973 **Figure 4.10**

1974 Mean \pm SE proportion of observations that intruder males were seen on the food patch
1975 and courting when the guard male was either present or absent (n = 60 males).

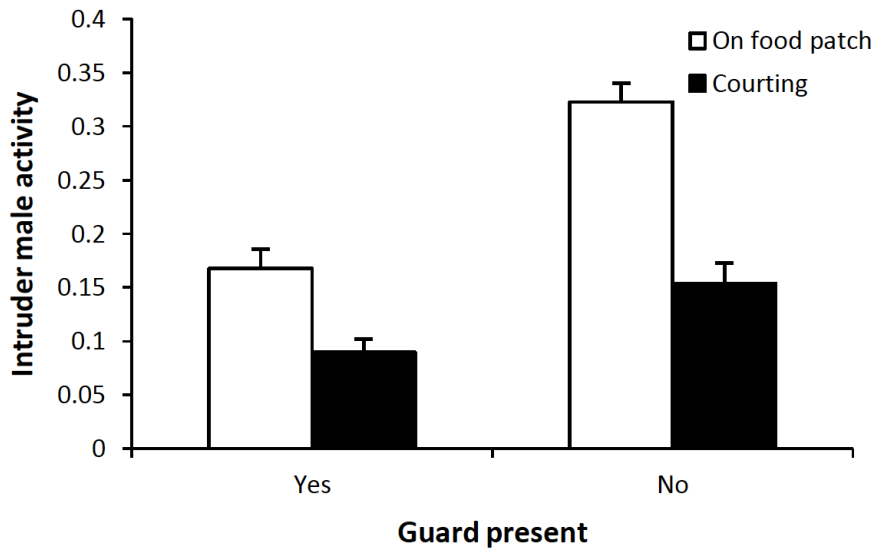


1976

1977 **Figure 4.11**

1978 Mean \pm SE number of rematings by intruder males when the guard male was either present
1979 or absent (n = 60 males).

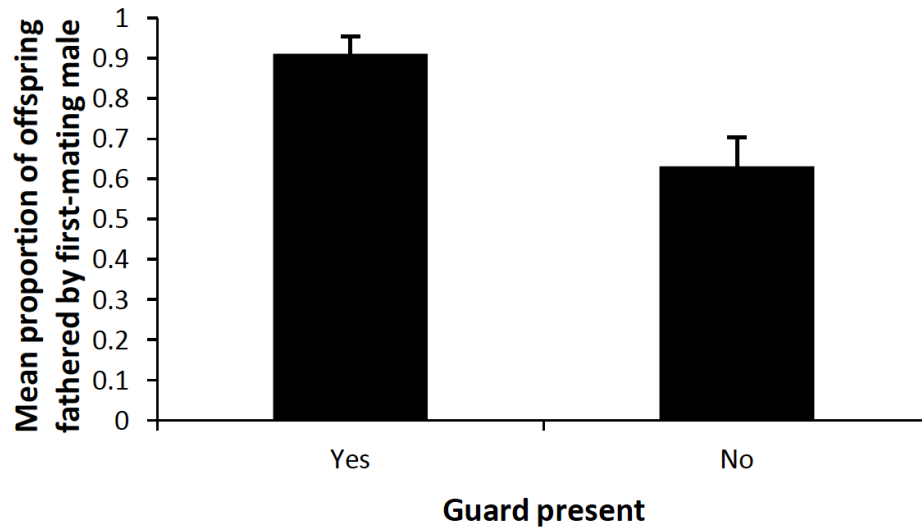
1980



1981

1982 **Figure 4.12**

1983 Mean \pm SE proportion of observations that intruder males were seen on the food patch and
1984 courting when the guard male was either present or absent (n = 60 males).



1985

1986 **Figure 4.13**

1987 Mean \pm SE proportion of offspring fathered by the guard male when he was either present
1988 or absent.

1989 **4.7 Discussion**

1990

1991 Our major findings were that male fruit flies occupying a food patch with their recent mates
1992 were more aggressive towards other males than were males with non-mate females (Figs
1993 4.1–4.8). The removal experiments indicated that such elevated aggression served for mate
1994 guarding because removing the male guards increased the food-patch occupancy, remating
1995 rates and paternity of intruder males (Figs 4.9–4.13). We should note that our experiments
1996 do not fully resolve the effects of either mating or experimental transfer into a new resource
1997 on male aggression. While mate guarding has been studied in a large variety of species
1998 (Alcock 1994; Simmons 2001), very few studies have experimentally tested its fitness
1999 consequences. Exceptions include a few bird studies in which short term detentions of
2000 males resulted in increased extra pair paternity (Chuang-Dobbs et al. 2001; Brylawski &
2001 Whittingham 2004).

2002 Our experimental results are consistent with the limited information about the
2003 natural history of fruit flies (*D. melanogaster*). In settings with dispersed, small, decaying
2004 fruits, large males defend the fruits most attractive for feeding and egg laying, which are
2005 frequented by females. These males are more likely to mate than are smaller males
2006 (Markow 1988; Hoffmann & Cacoyianni 1990). The focus of previous behavioural (e.g.
2007 Hoffmann 1987a; Hoffmann 1987b; Hoffmann & Cacoyianni 1990) and neurogenetic
2008 (Chen et al. 2002; Dierick & Greenspan 2006; Zwarts et al. 2011; Yuan et al. 2014) studies
2009 was on male territoriality. From an evolutionary ecological perspective, however, the fruit
2010 fly (*D. melanogaster*) mating system is a classical resource-defence polygyny (Emlen &
2011 Oring 1977), in which some males monopolize decaying fruit that females require for
2012 feeding and egg laying. While the previous research implied that males that monopolize
2013 attractive food sources are more likely to acquire mates, our work suggests that an equally
2014 or even more important function of male aggression is in reducing the frequency at which
2015 his recent mates remate with other males.

2016 One can argue that, just by maintaining his control of a fruit, the occupying male
2017 ensures his paternity. That is, males merely defend their fruit and there is no true mate

2018 guarding. Our data, however, indicate that the males show context-dependent aggression,
2019 with males at an attractive resource in the presence of their recent mates being more
2020 aggressive than males with non-mate females. The best explanation for this context-
2021 dependent aggression is that males elevate their levels of aggression in order to deter other
2022 males attracted to their recent mate. It is indeed likely that, in nature, a fruit occupied by a
2023 male and recently mated females attracts more intruder males than a fruit with only a male
2024 because recently mated females emit *cis*-vaccenyl acetate (cVA), which serves as an
2025 aggregation pheromone in fruit flies (Bartelt et al. 1985; Wertheim et al. 2006). Hence an
2026 evolved mechanism that generates increased aggression in a resource-defending male fruit
2027 fly after mating seems adaptive. In general, mate guarding in male fruit flies is somewhat
2028 similar to mate guarding in territorial birds (e.g. Birkhead 1979; Sundberg 1994; Dickinson
2029 1997; Brylawski & Whittingham 2004). In both systems, males engage in a conspicuous
2030 defense of either a resource (fruit flies) or territory (birds) and somewhat less conspicuous
2031 protection of their mate.

2032 To further assess the importance of aggression for mate guarding, we will require
2033 field data on two key behaviours of recently mated females, which are their tendency to
2034 stay at the fruit where they have just mated and their frequency of remating. Because males
2035 fight for the possession of the most desirable fallen fruits, which provide both adult and
2036 larval nourishment, we would expect females to frequent these fruits after mating in order
2037 to feed and lay eggs. There are currently no field data pertaining to this issue. The other
2038 key female behaviour for which we desire field data is the frequency of remating as a
2039 function of mating recency. Laboratory data provide a somewhat conflicting picture. On
2040 one hand, mating reduces female receptivity, and males find recently mated females much
2041 less attractive than virgin females (Manning 1962; Chapman et al. 2003). Indeed, in fly
2042 populations recently established from the wild, short-term tests lasting 15-60 min reveal no
2043 rematings in females mated up to 24 h beforehand (Dukas 2005). On the other hand, at least
2044 in small arenas, recently mated females that are incessantly courted by males for a few
2045 hours often remate (Billeter et al. 2012). This was true also in our experiments, in which
2046 trials lasting only 30 min had close to zero rematings (data not shown) whereas longer trials

2047 lasting 4 h had a high proportion of rematings (Figs 4.9, 4.11). The most critical field data,
2048 which ensured that there were no rematings during trapping, did indicate that females
2049 remate (Ochando et al. 1996; Harshman & Clark 1998), but they did not provide the desired
2050 information about the frequency of remating as a function of mating recency.

2051 While our results suggest a novel function of aggression in male fruit flies, we
2052 expect that its relative importance will vary depending on the ecological settings, which, in
2053 turn, will determine the typically plastic mating system. For example, aggression in the
2054 context of resource-defence polygyny will be most common in settings with distinct
2055 resources and relatively low male density (Emlen & Oring 1977). Environments with other
2056 conditions including those most common in fruit fly laboratories, which have a single food
2057 source and high male density, might select for either other types of aggression or a baseline
2058 of low aggression. That is, to achieve our goal of producing a comprehensive synthesis of
2059 the types of aggression and their biological bases, we must attend to the subtleties of fruit
2060 fly natural history in an evolutionary ecological context in addition to the mechanistic
2061 foundations of aggression.

2062

2063 **4.8 Acknowledgements**

2064

2065 We thank L. Dukas and two anonymous referees for comments on the ms, E. Dawes, I.
2066 Shams and K. Orig for assistance, and the Natural Sciences and Engineering Research
2067 Council of Canada, Canada Foundation for Innovation, and Ontario Ministry of Research
2068 and Innovation for funding.

2069 **4.9 References**

2070

2071 Alcock, J. 1994. Postinsemination associations between males and females in insects: the
2072 mate-guarding hypothesis. *Annual Review of Entomology*, 39, 1-21.

2073 Alekseyenko, Olga V., Chan, Y.-B., Fernandez, Maria de la P., Bülow, T., Pankratz, M. J.
2074 & Kravitz, Edward A. 2014. Single serotonergic neurons that modulate aggression in
2075 *Drosophila*. *Current Biology*, 24, 2700-2707.

2076 Ashburner, M. 1989. *Drosophila a Laboratory Handbook*. Cold Spring Harbor: Cold
2077 Spring Harbor Laboratory Press.

2078 Bartelt, R. J., Schaner, A. M. & Jackson, L. L. 1985. *cis*-vaccenyl acetate as an aggregation
2079 pheromone in *Drosophila melanogaster*. *Journal of Chemical Ecology*, 11, 1747-
2080 1756.

2081 Beasley, B. A. 1996. Males on guard: paternity defences in violet-green swallows and tree
2082 swallows. *Animal Behaviour*, 52, 1211-1224.

2083 Billeter, J.-C., Jagadeesh, S., Stepek, N., Azanchi, R. & Levine, J. D. 2012. *Drosophila*
2084 *melanogaster* females change mating behaviour and offspring production based on
2085 social context. *Proceedings of the Royal Society B: Biological Sciences*, 279, 2417-
2086 2425.

2087 Birkhead, T. R. 1979. Mate guarding in the magpie *Pica pica*. *Animal Behaviour*, 27, 866-
2088 874.

2089 Brylawski, A. M. Z. & Whittingham, L. A. 2004. An experimental study of mate guarding
2090 and paternity in house wrens. *Animal Behaviour*, 68, 1417-1424.

2091 Carroll, S. P. 1991. The adaptive significance of mate guarding in the soapberry bug,
2092 *Jadera haematoloma* (Hemiptera: Rhopalidae). *Journal of Insect Behavior*, 4, 509-
2093 530.

2094 Certel, S. J. & Kravitz, E. A. 2012. Scoring and analyzing aggression in *Drosophila*. *Cold*
2095 *Spring Harbor Protocols*, 2012, pdb. prot068130.

2096 Chapman, T., Bangham, J., Vinti, G., Seifried, B., Lung, O., Wolfner, M. F., Smith, H. K.
2097 & Partridge, L. 2003. The sex peptide of *Drosophila melanogaster*: Female post-
2098 mating responses analyzed by using RNA interference. *Proceedings of the National*
2099 *Academy of Sciences*, 100, 9923-9928.

2100 Chen, S., Lee, A. Y., Bowens, N. M., Huber, R. & Kravitz, E. A. 2002. Fighting fruit flies:
2101 A model system for the study of aggression. *Proceedings of the National Academy of*
2102 *Sciences*, 99, 5664-5668.

2103 Chuang-Dobbs, H. C., Webster, M. S. & Holmes, R. T. 2001. The effectiveness of mate
2104 guarding by male black-throated blue warblers. *Behavioral Ecology*, 12, 541-546.

2105 Darwin, C. 1871. *The Descent of Man and Selection in Relation to Sex*. London: Murray.

2106 Dickinson, J. L. & Leonard, M. L. 1996. Mate attendance and copulatory behaviour in
2107 western bluebirds: evidence of mate guarding. *Animal Behaviour*, 52, 981-992.

2108 Dickinson, J. L. 1997. Male detention affects extra-pair copulation frequency and pair
2109 behaviour in western bluebirds. *Animal Behaviour*, 53, 561-571.

2110 Dierick, H. A. & Greenspan, R. J. 2006. Molecular analysis of flies selected for aggressive
2111 behavior. *Nature Genetics*, 38, 1023-1031.

- 2112 Dow, M. A. & Schilcher, F. V. 1975. Aggression and mating success in *Drosophila*
2113 *melanogaster*. *Nature*, 254, 511-512.
- 2114 Dukas, R. 2005. Experience improves courtship in male fruit flies. *Animal Behaviour*, 69,
2115 1203-1209.
- 2116 Emlen, S. T. & Oring, L. W. 1977. Ecology, sexual selection, and the evolution of mating
2117 systems. *Science*, 197, 215-223.
- 2118 Gioti, A., Wigby, S., Wertheim, B., Schuster, E., Martinez, P., Pennington, C. J., Partridge,
2119 L. & Chapman, T. 2012. Sex peptide of *Drosophila melanogaster* males is a global
2120 regulator of reproductive processes in females. *Proceedings of the Royal Society B:*
2121 *Biological Sciences*, 279, 4423-4432.
- 2122 Gromko, M. H., Gilbert, D. G. & Richmond, R. C. 1984. Sperm transfer and use in the
2123 multiple mating system of *Drosophila*. In: *Sperm Competition and the Evolution of*
2124 *Animal Mating Systems* (Ed. by R. L. Smith), pp. 371-425. Orlando: Academic Press.
- 2125 Harshman, L. G. & Clark, A. G. 1998. Inference of sperm competition from broods of field-
2126 caught *Drosophila*. *Evolution*, 52, 1334-1341.
- 2127 Hoffmann, A. A. 1987a. Territorial encounters between *Drosophila* males of different
2128 sizes. *Animal Behaviour*, 35, 1899-1901.
- 2129 Hoffmann, A. A. 1987b. A laboratory study of male territoriality in the sibling species
2130 *Drosophila melanogaster* and *D. simulans*. *Animal Behaviour*, 35, 807-818.
- 2131 Hoffmann, A. A. & Cacoyianni, Z. 1990. Territoriality in *Drosophila melanogaster* as a
2132 conditional strategy. *Animal Behaviour*, 40, 526-537.
- 2133 Howard, H. E. 1920. *Territory in Bird Life*. London Murray.
- 2134 IBM-Corp. 2011. *IBM SPSS Statistics for Windows, Version 21.0*. Armonk, NY: IBM Corp.
- 2135 Manning, A. 1962. A sperm factor affecting the receptivity of *Drosophila melanogaster*
2136 females. *Nature (London)*, 194, 252-253.
- 2137 Markow, T. A. 1988. Reproductive behavior of *Drosophila melanogaster* and *D.*
2138 *nigrospiracula* in the field and in the laboratory. *Journal of Comparative Psychology*,
2139 102, 169-173.
- 2140 Ochoa, M. D., Reyes, A. & Ayala, F. J. 1996. Multiple paternity in two natural
2141 populations (orchard and vineyard) of *Drosophila*. *Proceedings of the National*
2142 *Academy of Sciences*, 93, 11769-11773.
- 2143 Parker, G. A. 1970. The reproductive behavior and the nature of sexual selection in
2144 *Scatophaga stercoraria* L. (diptera: Scatophagidae). Vii. The origin and evolution of
2145 the passive phase. *Evolution*, 24, 774-788.
- 2146 Price, C. S. C., Dyer, K. A. & Coyne, J. A. 1999. Sperm competition between *Drosophila*
2147 males involves both displacement and incapacitation. *Nature*, 400, 449-452.
- 2148 Sherman, K. J. 1983. The adaptive significance of postcopulatory mate guarding in a
2149 dragonfly, *Pachydiplax longipennis*. *Animal Behaviour*, 31, 1107-1115.
- 2150 Sherman, P. W. 1989. Mate guarding as paternity insurance in Idaho ground squirrels.
2151 *Nature*, 338, 418-420.
- 2152 Simmons, L. W. 2001. *Sperm Competition and its Evolutionary Consequences in the*
2153 *Insects*. Princeton, N.J.: Princeton University Press.
- 2154 Sundberg, J. 1994. Paternity guarding in the yellowhammer *Emberiza citrinella*: a
2155 detention experiment. *Journal Of Avian Biology*, 25, 135-141.

- 2156 Wertheim, B., Allemand, R., Vet, L. E. M. & Dicke, M. 2006. Effects of aggregation
2157 pheromone on individual behaviour and food web interactions: a field study on
2158 *Drosophila*. *Ecological Entomology*, 31, 216-226.
- 2159 Yuan, Q., Song, Y., Yang, C.-H., Jan, L. Y. & Jan, Y. N. 2014. Female contact modulates
2160 male aggression via a sexually dimorphic GABAergic circuit in *Drosophila*. *Nat*
2161 *Neurosci*, 17, 81-88.
- 2162 Yurkovic, A., Wang, O., Basu, A. C. & Kravitz, E. A. 2006. Learning and memory
2163 associated with aggression in *Drosophila melanogaster*. *Proceedings of the National*
2164 *Academy of Sciences USA*, 103, 17519-17524.
- 2165 Zwarts, L., Magwire, M. M., Carbone, M. A., Versteven, M., Herteleer, L., Anholt, R. R.
2166 H., Callaerts, P. & Mackay, T. F. C. 2011. Complex genetic architecture of
2167 *Drosophila* aggressive behavior. *Proceedings of the National Academy of Sciences*,
2168 108, 17070-17075.
2169

2170 **CHAPTER 5 – LIFE HISTORY OF AGGRESSION: EFFECTS OF AGE AND**
2171 **SEXUAL EXPERIENCE ON MALE AGGRESSION TOWARDS MALES AND**
2172 **FEMALES**

2173

2174 Baxter, C. M. & Dukas, R. (2017) Life history of aggression: effects of age and sexual
2175 experience on male aggression towards males and females. *Animal Behaviour*, 123:11–
2176 20.

2177

2178 **5.1 Abstract**

2179

2180 Aggression is a prominent behaviour well studied in a large variety of animals, but it has
2181 not been well integrated within life history research. To address this shortcoming, we
2182 conducted a series of experiments simultaneously quantifying the effects of age and sexual
2183 experience on the use of aggression in male fruit flies. We studied three types of aggression
2184 relevant to male fruit flies’ natural history: fighting in the context of resource defence,
2185 forced copulation with newly eclosed females, and coercion of recently mated females.
2186 Young, sexually mature flies were initially reluctant to use aggression towards either males
2187 or females. Within a few days, however, their use of aggression increased and then
2188 plateaued. While sexual experience caused males to decrease aggression towards females,
2189 it did not affect their aggression towards males. It is likely that aggression involves some
2190 cost, which leads males to favour peaceful over aggressive pursuit of females. However,
2191 sexually experienced males are probably highly motivated to deter other males from their
2192 apparently attractive resource. Our results highlight the importance of studying multiple
2193 types of aggression and the need for careful assessments of the relative fitness benefits and
2194 costs of aggression versus peaceful alternatives in shaping the life history of aggression.

2195

2196 **Key words:** aggression, coercion, *Drosophila melanogaster*, fighting, forced copulation,
2197 fruit fly, life history, remating, resource-defence polygyny

2198 **5.2 Introduction**

2199

2200 Life history research has been instrumental in identifying key features characterizing
2201 animals as they go through the major life transitions of growth, reproduction and aging
2202 (Stearns 1992; Roff 2002). The major focus of life history studies has appropriately been
2203 on topics such as age and size at sexual maturity, the number and size of offspring, trade-
2204 offs between current and future reproduction, and senescence (Stearns 1992). Although
2205 aggression is a prominent and well-studied animal behaviour (Nelson 2005; Hardy & Briffa
2206 2013), it has received scant attention in life history research. Notable research on aggression
2207 includes extensive work on territorial fights in a variety of spider species (Riechert 1986;
2208 Elwood & Prenter 2013) and butterflies (Davies 1978; Kemp 2013), shell fights in hermit
2209 crabs, *Pagurus bernhardus* (Elwood & Neil 1991; Briffa & Elwood 2001), contests in red
2210 deer, *Cervus elaphus*, and other ungulates (Clutton-Brock, Guinness & Albon 1982;
2211 Jennings & Gammel 2013), and violence in humans (Quetelet 1833; Daly & Wilson 1988;
2212 Baron & Richardson 2004; Daly 2016).

2213 The two relevant life history models of aggression predict that younger males
2214 should be less willing to fight than older males. This is because younger males have a higher
2215 residual reproductive value than older males and can thus lose more from injuries (Parker
2216 1974; Kemp 2006). Kemp (2006) noted, however, that young individuals should be more
2217 willing to fight under a narrow set of conditions where there is a steep decline in resource-
2218 holding potential with age and the benefit from holding a resource is relatively small. While
2219 the existing models are insightful, it is not clear how relevant they are to species that lack
2220 weapons. In such species, males cannot readily inflict injuries on their opponents, so the
2221 costs of fighting are not clear. Another limitation of the current models is that they do not
2222 consider a broad range of realistic population dynamics parameters, such as growth rate
2223 and density dependence, which strongly affect predictions of life history models (Abrams
2224 1993; Williams, Day, Fletcher & Rowe 2006). Indeed, although both Kemp (2006) and
2225 others (Huntingford & Turner 1987; Hardy & Briffa 2013) highlighted a general pattern of
2226 fighting tending to increase with male age in a variety of species, they also noted many

2227 exceptions. Two well-studied species in which peak aggression occurs in young rather than
2228 older males are the lizard *Anolis aeneus* (Stamps 1978) and humans (Farrington 1986; Reiss
2229 & Roth 1993).

2230 While many studies reported on variation in aggression with age (reviewed in
2231 Huntingford & Turner 1987; Kemp 2006; Hardy & Briffa 2013), most did not carefully
2232 account for correlates of age that can affect aggression. Such possible confounds include
2233 selective mortality (Huntingford & Turner 1987), mating experience, as well as subtle
2234 effects of social housing conditions prior to tests. For example, if subjects are housed in
2235 groups, social interactions within the group might determine subsequent aggression.
2236 Another limitation of most studies of aggression is that they focus on a single context, most
2237 commonly male fighting associated with access to females. It is widely agreed, however,
2238 that aggression is not a unitary phenomenon (Moyer 1968; Huber & Kravitz 2010). Hence
2239 it is highly appropriate that we incorporate multiple, ecologically relevant types of
2240 aggression into routine research protocols.

2241 To broaden our knowledge on the life history of aggression, we have adopted fruit
2242 flies (*Drosophila melanogaster*) as a model system and focused on three types of
2243 aggression. Several factors make fruit flies an ideal species for examining the life history
2244 of aggression. The flies are short-lived and cheap to maintain. Ethical difficulties are
2245 limited because the flies do not inflict injuries during fights. There are numerous tools for
2246 functional and mechanistic research in this species. Finally, fruit flies have recently been
2247 adopted for genetic and neurobiological research on aggression (Chen, Lee, Bowens, Huber
2248 & Kravitz 2002; Dierick & Greenspan 2006; Zhou, Rao & Rao 2008; Edwards et al. 2009;
2249 Anholt & Mackay 2012), which, combined with our evolutionary ecological approach, can
2250 help illuminate general features of aggression and its trajectory throughout life.

2251 We focused on three realistic types of male aggression, fighting in the context of
2252 resource defence, forced copulation with recently eclosed (teneral) females, and coercion
2253 of recently mated females. In settings with small, dispersed fruit and low fly density,
2254 capable male fruit flies use aggression to monopolize the attractive patches that females
2255 seek for feeding and egg laying (Dow & Schilcher 1975; Hoffmann 1987; Markow 1988).

2256 Resource-holding males also rely on aggression to guard females they have recently mated
2257 with (Baxter, Barnett & Dukas 2015a). By far, fighting in the context of resource defence
2258 has dominated the mechanistic literature on fruit fly aggression, although most papers refer
2259 to it as territorial aggression (Hoffmann 1987; Chen et al. 2002; Edwards, Rollmann,
2260 Morgan & Mackay 2006).

2261 In addition to the male–male aggression protocol, we also examined two types of
2262 male aggression towards females. Forced copulation with teneral females has been well
2263 characterized in the field and laboratory. Such forced copulation occurs primarily within 2
2264 h post eclosion. During this short period, the vaginal plates of teneral females are still soft.
2265 Hence the females cannot physically resist intercourse by males that succeed in mounting
2266 them in spite of the females’ persistent efforts to dislodge the males. We chose this type of
2267 aggression because it occurs at a sufficiently high frequency and thus can have significant
2268 effects on both male and female fitness (Markow 2000; Seeley & Dukas 2011; Dukas &
2269 Jongsma 2012b, a). While the role of coercion in the remating of recently mated females
2270 has not been well addressed, there is ample evidence that such rematings are more likely to
2271 occur at high male-to-female ratios, after long periods of persistent male mating attempts,
2272 and when females have no refuge from males (Gromko, Gilbert & Richmond 1984; Wigby
2273 & Chapman 2004; Byrne, Rice & Rice 2008). These features are typically associated with
2274 convenience polyandry (Thornhill & Alcock 1983; Arnqvist & Rowe 2005), where females
2275 give in to males’ persistent harassment and remate. We should note that aggression and
2276 forced copulation are typically discussed in distinct bodies of literature, so one might
2277 question whether it is appropriate to call forced copulation aggression. We feel, however,
2278 that when physical force is used by one actor (the aggressor), which the other actor (the
2279 victim) attempts to evade, and when the aggressor inflicts injuries that reduce the expected
2280 life span of the victim (Dukas & Jongsma 2012b), the term aggression is appropriate.

2281 Overall then, we tested the effects of male age and mating experience on three types
2282 of aggression. The theoretical models suggest that, generally, male aggression should
2283 increase with age (Parker 1974; Kemp 2006). Furthermore, we have previously
2284 documented that sexually mature, 1-day-old males spent less time than did 4-day-old males

2285 courting recently mated females that were unlikely to remate. Males' mate choosiness
2286 decreased with age and reached asymptote by age 7 days (Dukas & Baxter 2014; Baxter,
2287 Barnett & Dukas 2015b). This suggests that young males are less willing to incur costs
2288 associated with access to females than are mature males. We thus predicted that, as with
2289 our mate choosiness data (Baxter et al. 2015b), both male–male and male–female
2290 aggression would initially increase and then asymptote with male age. Our predictions for
2291 the effects of sexual experience were more complex. Previous data indicated a higher mate
2292 choosiness in previously mated than in virgin males (Byrne & Rice 2006; Baxter et al.
2293 2015b). Hence we predicted that, compared to virgin males, sexually experienced males
2294 would show less coercion of teneral and recently mated females because such females
2295 clearly reject pursuing males. As for male–male aggression in the context of resource
2296 defence, we predicted no effect of sexual experience owing to the operation of two
2297 opposing factors. On the one hand, we expected sexual deprivation to increase males'
2298 motivation to use aggression in order to secure access to females. On the other hand,
2299 because encountering and mating with females informs males that they occupy an attractive
2300 resource, we expected previously mated males to show a higher motivation to use
2301 aggression for resource defence than males that had not encountered females previously.

2302

2303 **5.3 Methods**

2304

2305 *5.3.1 General*

2306 We used descendants of wild-caught *D. melanogaster* collected in several southern
2307 Ontario localities in August 2014. We housed the flies in population cages containing
2308 several hundred flies per cage. We kept the cages in an environmental chamber at 25 °C
2309 and 60% relative humidity with a 12:12 h light:dark cycle, with the lights turning on at
2310 1000 hours. We reared the experimental flies at a low density of about 300 eggs per 240 ml
2311 bottle containing 50 ml of standard fly medium made of water, sucrose, cornmeal, yeast,
2312 agar and methyl paraben. We sexed flies within 4 h of eclosion to ensure virginity and
2313 minimal experience with other flies. We used gentle aspiration to sex and transfer males

2314 into individual 40 ml vials each containing 5 ml of medium, and CO₂ to sex and place
2315 females in groups of 20 per vial, which also contained 5 ml of medium and a dash of live
2316 yeast.

2317 We conducted all tests in cylindrical arenas made of Plexiglas (3 cm in diameter
2318 and 2.5 cm high). To deter flies from climbing on the arenas' walls and ceilings, we coated
2319 the walls with Insect-a-Slip (Fluon, BioQuip, Gardena, CA, U.S.A.) and the ceilings with
2320 Surfasil (Sigma Aldrich, Oakville, ON, Canada). We covered the floor of each arena with
2321 filter paper, and placed at its centre a circular food patch (1.3 cm in diameter, 1.5 mm high)
2322 coated with a suspension made of 3 g of live yeast in 100 ml of grapefruit juice. Throughout
2323 the study, we provided flies with ad libitum food optimized for fruit flies' preferences and
2324 needs, kept flies at low densities and kept to a minimum the duration of aggressive
2325 encounters.

2326 Our experiments comprised two dimensions. First, we examined independently the
2327 effects of male age and sexual experience. Second, we assessed the effects of age and
2328 experience on three types of aggression: male–male aggression in the context of resource
2329 defence, and male–female aggression in the contexts of forced copulation of teneral females
2330 and coercive matings with recently mated females. Below we first detail our protocols for
2331 manipulating male age and experience, and then present specific methods for each of the
2332 three types of aggression.

2333

2334 *5.3.2 Effects of age on aggression*

2335 As individuals age, they gain further experience. To separate the effects of age and
2336 experience on aggression, we conducted two sets of experiments. In the first set, we varied
2337 male age while holding mating experience constant whereas in the second set, we
2338 manipulated male mating experience while holding age constant. In the experiments on
2339 male age, we used males that were 1, 4 and 7 days old (see Results, Fig. 5.1). We housed
2340 these males individually in regular food vials until the time of testing. Our previous work
2341 indicated that males are sexually mature and have a high mating success and fertility when
2342 they are 1 day old (Dukas & Baxter 2014; Baxter et al. 2015b). We used males that were
2343 1–7 days old because this represents a realistic age range for wild fruit fly populations. The

2344 limited field data suggest a median life span of 3–6 days in *D. melanogaster* (Rosewell &
2345 Shorrocks, 1987). In the similarly sized antler flies (*Protopiophila litigate*), median life
2346 span in the field was 6 days. Finally, in a few honeybee field studies, median forager life
2347 span was 5–7 days (Dukas & Visscher 1994; Dukas 2008a; Dukas 2008b). We had to limit
2348 the number of male age classes used because it was crucial that we conduct tests of all age
2349 groups simultaneously due to day and time of day effects.

2350

2351 *5.3.3 Effects of mating experience on aggression*

2352 In the experiments on male age and aggression, we equalized males' experience by
2353 keeping the males away from females prior to testing. Age and experience, however, were
2354 positively correlated, meaning that older males had been deprived of females longer than
2355 younger males. We thus conducted another set of experiments in which we manipulated
2356 males' experience with females while keeping male age constant. On day 1, we randomly
2357 assigned newly eclosed males into either an experienced treatment or a deprived treatment.
2358 In the experienced male treatment, we added one 3-day-old virgin female to each male vial
2359 on days 2, 3 and 4, without removing the females added on the previous days (see Results,
2360 Fig. 5.9). This means that each male of the experienced treatment had ample opportunities
2361 to court and mate with both virgin and recently mated females. After the experience phase,
2362 we checked the food vials for the presence of larvae, which indicated that each male did in
2363 fact mate with females in his vial. In the deprived male treatment, we simply left the males
2364 alone in their vials, and thus they never had the opportunity to interact with females prior
2365 to the test (see Results, Fig. 5.9). We conducted the tests on day 5, when the males were 4
2366 days old.

2367

2368 *5.3.4 Resource defence*

2369 Our basic protocol involved aspirating two males and a 4-day-old, recently mated
2370 female into each arena. The female had mated with a nonfocal male 1–3 h prior to the test.
2371 After a 10 min habituation, we videorecorded each arena for 15 min using webcams
2372 (Logitech HD Pro C920). Later, observers blind to fly treatment scored the videos using

2373 Noldus software (Noldus Information Technology, Wageningen, The Netherlands). The
2374 observers recorded the total duration of aggression by the two males, which included all
2375 occurrences of lunging, wing threat, high-level fencing, charging, holding, boxing and
2376 tussling (Chen et al. 2002; Dierick & Greenspan 2006). We analysed the data with a
2377 generalized linear model (GLM) with gamma distribution and log link function (IBM
2378 2013), and applied sequential Bonferroni corrections to the post hoc comparisons.

2379 In the test for the effect of male age, our three treatments included pairs of males
2380 that were 1, 4 or 7 days old ($N = 36$ pairs of males per treatment). We conducted two
2381 experiments assessing the effect of sexual experience. The first experiment consisted of our
2382 preferred protocol, in which we added to each arena one experienced and one deprived
2383 male, and a 4-day-old, recently mated female ($N = 40$ arenas). The female had mated with
2384 a nonfocal male 1–3 h prior to the test. After a 10 min habituation, we videorecorded each
2385 arena for 15 min. Later, observers blind to male treatment recorded from the videos the
2386 total duration of aggression displayed by each male. We analysed the data with a
2387 generalized linear model (GLM) with gamma distribution and log link function (IBM
2388 2013), with male treatment as a repeated measure within each arena.

2389 In our second test for the effect of sexual experience, we replicated the protocol of
2390 Yuan et al. (2014), because their results, unlike ours, suggested that males housed with
2391 females are less aggressive towards other males than are males deprived of females. To
2392 each arena, we added two males and two 4-day-old virgin females. We had three treatments
2393 in which the two contesting males within an arena were both deprived of females, both
2394 experienced with females, or one was deprived and one was experienced with females. One
2395 male per arena was coloured with pink fluorescent powder, and this colouring was
2396 counterbalanced across male experience. After adding the males to the arenas, we observed
2397 the arenas for mating. After the matings ended, we videorecorded each arena for 30 min.
2398 Later, observers blind to male treatment recorded from the videos the total duration of
2399 aggression displayed by each male.

2400 We followed the protocol of Yuan et al. (2014) and discarded all trials in which one
2401 of the males did not mate. The sexually experienced males failed to mate in 23 trials, and

2402 the sexually deprived males failed to mate in 12 trials. We also excluded eight trials in
2403 which the female mated more than once. After these exclusions, we ended up with $N = 16$
2404 experienced versus experienced arenas, $N = 18$ deprived versus deprived arenas and $N = 17$
2405 experienced versus deprived arenas. The need to discard trials in which one of the males
2406 did not mate is an obvious weakness of the Yuan et al. (2014) protocol. Another
2407 complication is that matings with virgin females creates a conflicting, unnatural dynamic
2408 in which both males mate-guard their recently mated female (see Baxter et al. 2015a). We
2409 analysed the data with a generalized linear model (GLM) with gamma distribution and log
2410 link function (IBM 2013), with male treatment as a repeated measure within each arena.

2411

2412 *5.3.5 Forced copulation with teneral females*

2413 We collected teneral females within a few minutes post eclosion and aspirated one
2414 teneral female and one male into each arena. Observers blind to male age continuously
2415 scanned the arenas for 2 h and recorded the mating latencies and durations. In the test for
2416 the effect of male age, our three treatments included males that were 1, 4 or 7 days old (N
2417 = 96 arenas per treatment). In the test for the effect of sexual experience, our two treatments
2418 were experienced and deprived males ($N = 128$ arenas per treatment). We analysed the data
2419 with Cox regressions, and used simple contrasts when comparing three treatments.

2420

2421 *5.3.6 Coercive mating with recently mated females*

2422 5.3.6a Evidence for male coercion

2423 To critically assess whether mating with recently mated females is coercive, we
2424 compared courtship and matings with recently mated and virgin females. We had three
2425 treatments (Fig. 5.5): mated females; virgin females matched to the mated female treatment
2426 for trial start time (virgin 1 treatment); and virgin females matched to the mated female
2427 treatment for approximate mating start time (virgin 2 treatment). This protocol allowed us
2428 to simultaneously compare the initial courtship of mated and virgin females, courtship just
2429 prior to mating, and behaviour during mating while controlling for time of day given that
2430 the mating latency of previously mated females is much longer than that of virgin females

2431 (see below). The initial matings of the recently mated females occurred 1 day before the
2432 test with nonfocal, 4-day-old males in regular food vials containing a dash of live yeast.
2433 After the matings, we discarded the males and kept the females in their individual food
2434 vials overnight. We later examined the vials for the presence of larvae to ensure that the
2435 initial matings were fertile. Only one female was not fertile, and she was excluded from the
2436 analysis.

2437 For the test phase, we placed in each arena a 4-day-old virgin male and a 4-day-old
2438 female belonging either to the mated or virgin 1 treatment. We then began videorecording,
2439 which continued until mating ended or until 4 h passed. Based on preliminary data, we set
2440 up the virgin 2 treatment about 1 h later. This treatment was similar to the virgin 1 treatment
2441 except that it started later such that matings occurred at about the same time as matings in
2442 the mated treatment (Fig. 5.5). Later, we generated three sets of similar-length video clips
2443 for analyses (squares in Fig. 5.5). The initial courtship consisted of the courtship during the
2444 first few minutes of trials with virgin 1 and mated females (purple squares in Fig. 5.5). The
2445 length of these clips was determined by the short mating latencies of the virgin females.
2446 The final courtship consisted of the courtship during the last few minutes prior to mating
2447 with virgin 2 and mated females (blue squares in Fig. 5.5). Again, the length of these clips
2448 was determined by the short mating latencies of the virgin females. Finally, the mating clips
2449 (green squares in Fig. 5.5) included the full mating by each female as we did not expect a
2450 major difference in mating duration between the treatments (Bretman, Fricke & Chapman
2451 2009). Separating the courtship and mating portions and equalizing the lengths within each
2452 set allowed us to remain blind to female treatment given the obvious differences in mating
2453 latencies.

2454 Observers blind to female treatment recorded from each of the courtship clips the
2455 duration of male courtship (Dukas & Dukas 2012). While we also examined a variety of
2456 other male and female behaviours during courtship as we have done in the past (Seeley &
2457 Dukas 2011; Dukas & Scott 2015), we found no substantial differences between the
2458 treatments. For the mating clips, we recorded the duration of time that females kicked the
2459 males and had their wings closed. We considered closed wings as evidence for coercive

2460 mating because, prior to consensual mating, females spread their wings and this allows
2461 males to firmly hold the females during copulation (Spieth 1974). We also recorded from
2462 the mating clips the duration of unstable male mounting, which included males struggling
2463 to stay mounted on the females or being noticeably at an angle to the females rather than
2464 being securely mounted on her dorsal side between her wings. Because these data violated
2465 normality assumptions even after transformations, and showed no good fit to other
2466 distributions, we used nonparametric statistics in the analysis of coercive mating
2467 behaviours.

2468 Our sample sizes for the virgin 1, virgin 2 and mated female treatments were 22, 22
2469 and 28, respectively. One of the females from the mated female treatment did not produce
2470 offspring as a result of her first mating, and therefore was excluded from the analyses.
2471 There were also one, two and three trials in the virgin 1, virgin 2 and mated female
2472 treatments, respectively, that did not result in mating during the test phase. Therefore, these
2473 trials are not included in the analysis of coercive mating behaviours, giving us sample sizes
2474 of 21, 20 and 24 for virgin 1, virgin 2 and mated female treatments. However, these trials
2475 were still included in mating latency comparisons, as we performed Cox regressions to
2476 compare mating latencies between treatments, which take the absence of mating into
2477 consideration.

2478

2479 5.3.6b Effects of age

2480 This experiment had two phases, the first involving the initial mating of virgin
2481 females and the second being the actual remating test. Theoretically, rematings could be
2482 affected by the age of the males that the females had initially mated with. Hence we had
2483 three types of mated females that initially mated with virgin, nonfocal males that were
2484 either 1, 4 or 7 days old. The initial matings occurred in regular food vials containing a
2485 dash of live yeast, and each containing one male and one female that was 3 days old. After
2486 the matings, we discarded the males and kept the females in their individual food vials
2487 overnight. We later examined the vials for the presence of larvae to ensure that the first
2488 matings were fertile and excluded from the analysis the 30 females (15% of the total
2489 sample) who were infertile (11 mated to 1-day-old males, 9 mated to 4-day-old males and

2490 10 mated to 7-day-old males).

2491 As before, our three main treatments included males that were 1, 4 or 7 days old (N
2492 = 56 1-day-old males, $N = 57$ 4-day-old males and $N = 52$ 7-day-old males, after infertile
2493 females were excluded). In addition, we also had three categories within each male age, of
2494 females initially mated with a male that was 1, 4 or 7 days old. This generated a total of
2495 nine treatment combinations. We aspirated one recently mated female and one focal male
2496 into each arena. Observers blind to fly treatment scanned the arenas continuously for 4 h,
2497 recording mating latencies and durations. We analysed the data using a Cox regression with
2498 simple contrasts. Note that we recorded forced copulations with teneral females over 2 h
2499 and coercive matings with recently mated females for 4 h owing to relevant natural history
2500 factors. By definition, the teneral state is transitional, and most forced copulations with
2501 teneral females occur within 2 h (Markow 2000; Seeley & Dukas 2011). In contrast, the
2502 frequency of coercive matings with recently mated females is positively correlated with the
2503 duration of persistent male coercive attempts (Gromko et al. 1984).

2504

2505 5.3.6c Effects of experience

2506 This experiment, like the previous one, had two phases. The initial matings occurred
2507 during the first phase in regular food vials containing a dash of live yeast, with each vial
2508 containing one virgin 4-day-old male and one female that was 3 days old. We discarded 22
2509 females (15% of the total sample) who did not produce larvae after the initial mating. In
2510 the second phase, we aspirated one male from either the experienced or deprived treatment
2511 and a recently mated female into each arena ($N = 62$ experienced and $N = 58$ deprived males
2512 after infertile females were excluded). Observers blind to male treatment scanned the arenas
2513 continuously for 4 h, recording the latency and duration of any matings that occurred. We
2514 analysed the data with a Cox regression.

2515

2516 **5.4 Results**

2517

2518 *5.4.1 Effects of age on aggression*

2519

2520 5.4.1a Resource defence

2521 Aggression varied significantly with age (GLM: Wald $\chi^2_2 = 47.7$, $N = 108$,
2522 $P < 0.001$; Fig. 5.2). Four-day-old males were more aggressive than 1-day-old males
2523 ($P < 0.001$), but the 4- and 7-day-old males showed similar levels of aggression ($P = 0.33$).

2524

2525 5.4.1b Forced copulation with teneral females

2526 The frequency of forced copulations varied significantly with male age (Cox
2527 regression: Wald $\chi^2_2 = 9.7$, $N = 288$, $P < 0.01$; Fig. 5.3). Four- and 7-day-old males force-
2528 copulated significantly more frequently than 1-day-old males (Wald $\chi^2_1 = 7.7$, $N = 192$,
2529 $P < 0.005$ and Wald $\chi^2_1 = 9.5$, $N = 192$, $P < 0.005$, respectively), but 7-day-old males did not
2530 force-copulate significantly more frequently than 4-day-old males (Wald $\chi^2_1 = 0.76$, $N =$
2531 192 , $P = 0.38$).

2532

2533 5.4.1c Coercive mating with recently mated females

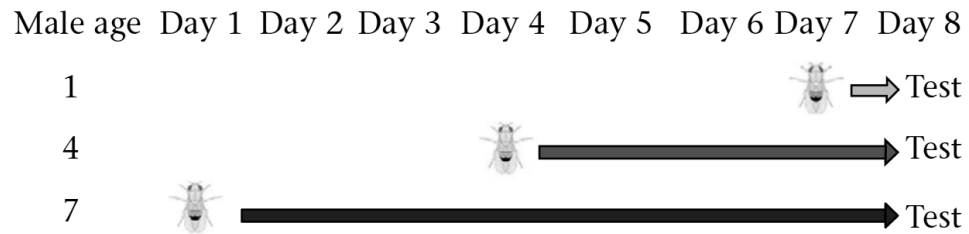
2534 We first tested whether remating involved male coercion. While males spent similar
2535 proportions of time courting virgin and previously mated females during the initial few
2536 minutes of trials (purple squares in Fig. 5.5; Mann–Whitney U test: $U = 227$, $N_1 = 21$, $N_2 =$
2537 24 , $P = 0.57$; Fig. 5.6), they showed significantly more intense courtship of the previously
2538 mated than of the virgin females in the few minutes just prior to mating (blue squares in
2539 Fig. 5.5; $U = 45$, $N_1 = 20$, $N_2 = 24$, $P < 0.001$; Fig. 5.6).

2540 Mating latency varied significantly with female treatment (Cox regression: Wald
2541 $\chi^2_2 = 20.6$, $N = 71$, $P < 0.001$; Fig. 5.7). The mating latencies in the virgin 1 and virgin 2
2542 treatments (means \pm SEs of 3.5 ± 1.3 and 3.0 ± 0.8 min, respectively) were much shorter
2543 than those in the mated female treatment (48.1 ± 8.3 min; Cox regression: Wald $\chi^2_1 = 17.4$,
2544 $N = 49$, $P < 0.001$ and Wald $\chi^2_1 = 13.4$, $N = 49$, $P < 0.001$, respectively; Fig. 5.7). During

2545 mating, the previously mated females spent a larger proportion of time kicking and with
2546 their wings closed (Mann–Whitney U test: $U = 177$, $N_1 = 20$, $N_2 = 24$, $P = 0.095$ and $U =$
2547 144 , $N_1 = 20$, $N_2 = 24$, $P < 0.05$, respectively; Fig. 5.8). Consequently, the males were more
2548 likely to have an unstable hold of the previously mated than of the virgin females ($U =$
2549 168.5 , $N_1 = 20$, $N_2 = 24$, $P = 0.063$; Fig. 5.8). The mating durations in the mated female
2550 treatment (14.8 ± 0.58 min) were significantly longer than in the virgin 2 female treatment
2551 (12.7 ± 0.46 min; $U = 129$, $N_1 = 20$, $N_2 = 24$, $P < 0.01$).

2552 Next, we assessed the effects of male age on the frequency of matings with recently
2553 mated females. Mating frequency varied significantly with male age (Cox regression: Wald
2554 $\chi^2_2 = 20.2$, $N = 165$, $P < 0.001$; Fig. 5.4). Four- and 7-day-old males mated with recently
2555 mated females more frequently than did 1-day-old males (Cox regression: Wald $\chi^2_1 = 14.4$,
2556 $N = 113$, $P < 0.001$ and Wald $\chi^2_1 = 18.7$, $N = 108$, $P < 0.001$, respectively). There was no
2557 significant difference in the mating frequency between 4- and 7-day-old males (Cox
2558 regression: Wald $\chi^2_1 = 0.50$, $N = 109$, $P = 0.48$). The age of the first-mating male in each
2559 treatment did not affect the likelihood of remating (Wald $\chi^2_2 = 2.3$, $N = 165$, $P = 0.32$).

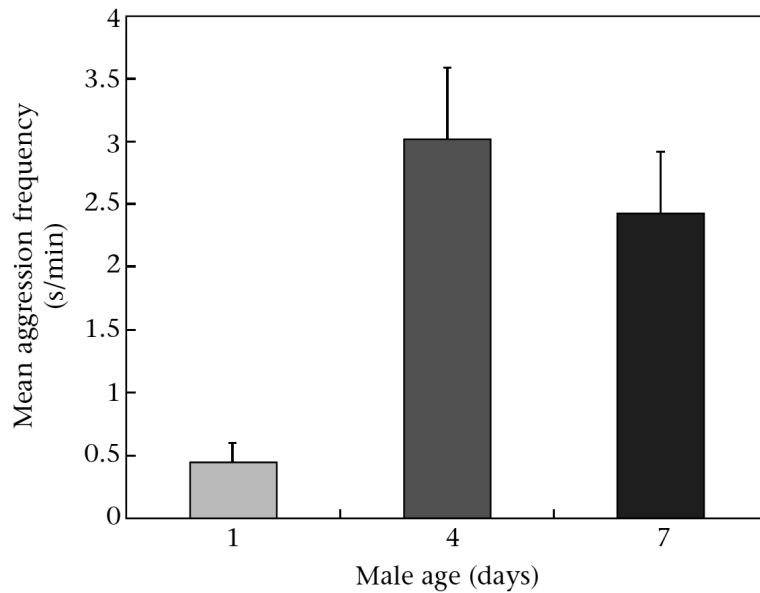
2560 The trials for coercive remating with recently mated females were 240 min in
2561 duration; however we also analysed the frequency of remating after 120 min to allow for
2562 direct comparisons between these results and the results for forced copulation of teneral
2563 females. We found that after 120 min, mating frequency varied significantly with male age
2564 (Cox regression: Wald $\chi^2_2 = 8.5$, $N = 165$, $P < 0.05$; Fig. 5.4). Four- and 7-day-old males
2565 mated more frequently than 1-day-old males (Cox regression: Wald $\chi^2_1 = 3.2$, $N = 113$,
2566 $P < 0.073$ and Wald $\chi^2_1 = 8.1$, $N = 108$, $P < 0.005$, respectively). The mating frequencies of
2567 4- and 7-day-old males did not vary significantly (Cox regression: Wald $\chi^2_1 = 2.3$, $N = 109$,
2568 $P = 0.13$). The age of the first-mating male in each treatment did not affect the likelihood
2569 of remating (Wald $\chi^2_2 = 0.78$, $N = 165$, $P = 0.68$).



2570

2571 **Figure 5.1**

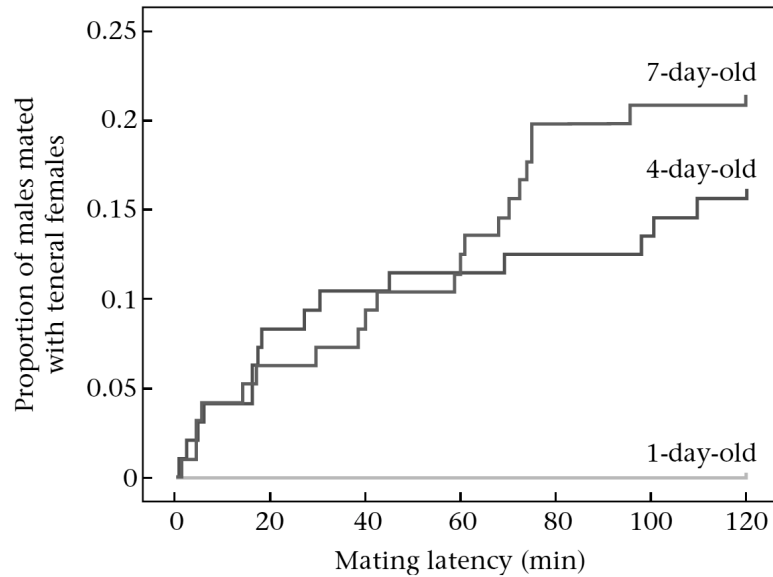
2572 Three treatments for the effects of age on aggression: males were 1, 4 and 7 days old when
2573 tested on day 8.
2574



2575

2576 **Figure 5.2**

2577 Mean + SE aggression frequency per arena in the three male age treatments ($N = 108$ arenas,
2578 36 per treatment).

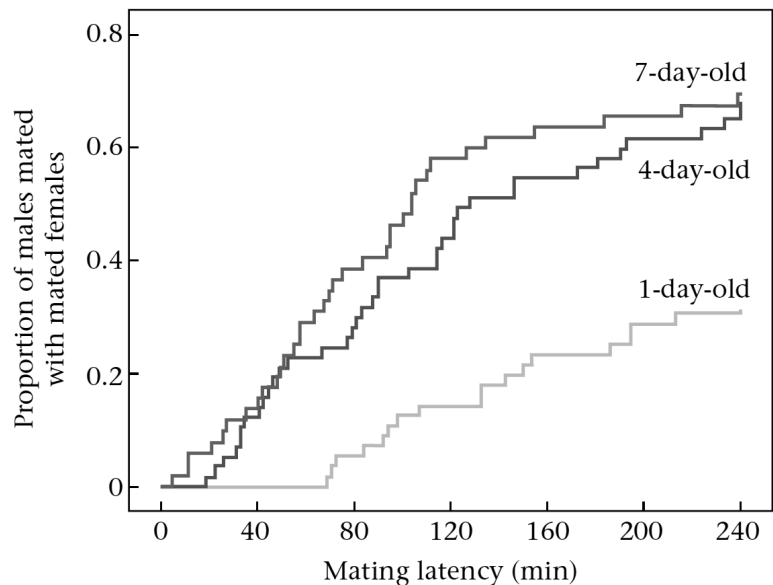


2579

2580 **Figure 5.3**

2581 The cumulative proportion of 1-, 4- and 7-day-old males that force-copulated with teneral
2582 females across a 120 min trial duration ($N = 288$, 96 per treatment).

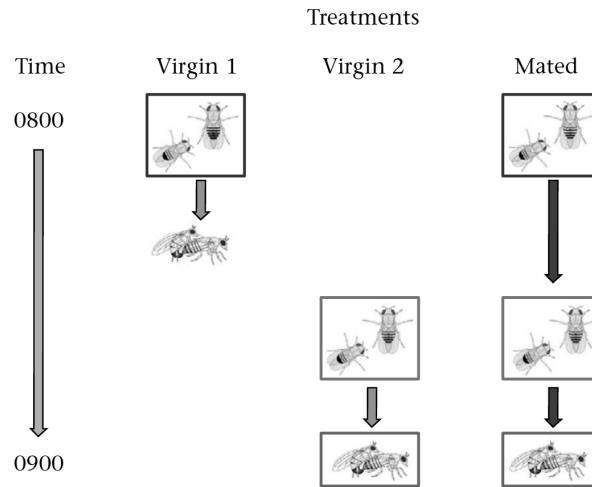
2583



2584

2585 **Figure 5.4**

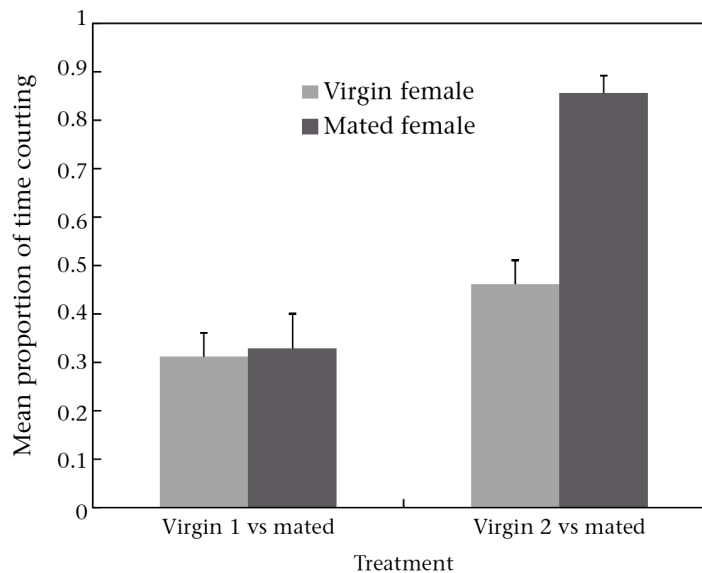
2586 The cumulative proportion of 1-, 4- and 7-day-old males that mated with recently mated
2587 females across a 240 min trial duration ($N = 165$, with 56 1-day-old males, 57 4-day-old
2588 males and 52 7-day-old males).



2589

2590 **Figure 5.5**

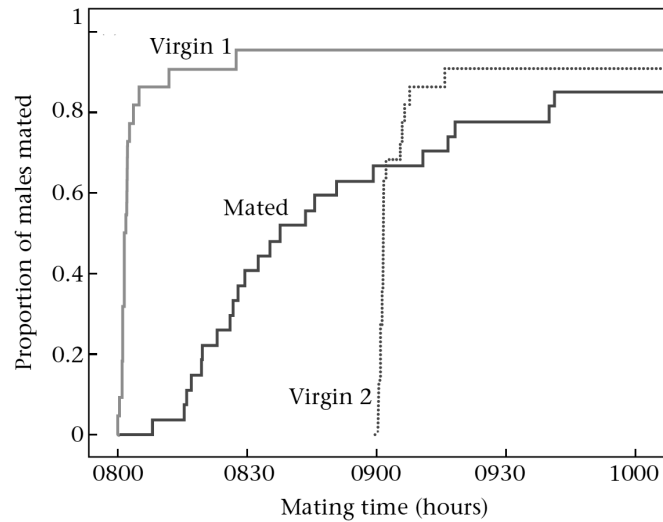
2591 Three treatments for testing whether mating with recently mated females is coercive. The
 2592 virgin 1 female treatment was matched to the mated female treatment for trial start time
 2593 (purple squares) whereas the virgin 2 female treatment was matched to the mated female
 2594 treatment for the approximate times of courtship just prior to mating (blue squares) and
 2595 mating (green squares).
 2596



2597

2598 **Figure 5.6**

2599 Mean + SE proportion of time males spent courting virgin and mated females at the
 2600 commencement of trials (virgin 1 versus mated) and just prior to mating (virgin 2 versus
 2601 mated) ($N = 65$, with 21 virgin 1, 20 virgin 2 and 24 mated female trials).

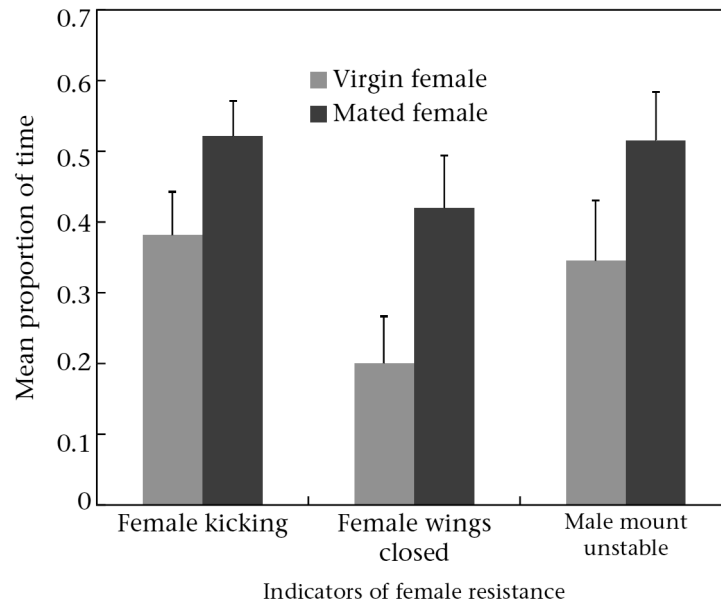


2602

2603 **Figure 5.7**

2604 The cumulative proportion of virgin 1, virgin 2 and mated females matings. Note that trials
2605 of the virgin 1 and mated females started at 0800 hours while trials of the virgin 2 treatment
2606 started at 0900 hours.

2607



2608

2609 **Figure 5.8**

2610 Mean + SE proportion of time females resisted during mating (through kicking and having
2611 their wings closed) and proportion of time males struggled to maintain mounting of
2612 females. Matings occurred at approximately the same time of day (green squares in Fig.
2613 5.5).

2614 *5.4.2 Effects of mating experience on aggression*

2615

2616 5.4.2a Resource defence

2617 In the first experiment with a single mated female in each arena, the experienced
2618 and deprived males showed similar levels of aggression (GLM: Wald $\chi^2_1 = 0.34$, $N = 40$
2619 arenas, $P = 0.56$; Fig. 5.10). In the second experiment with two virgin females in each
2620 arena, the experienced and deprived males showed similar levels of aggression (GLM main
2621 effect of experience: Wald $\chi^2_1 = 1.4$, $N = 49$ deprived and 47 experienced males, $P = 0.24$;
2622 Fig. 5.13).

2623

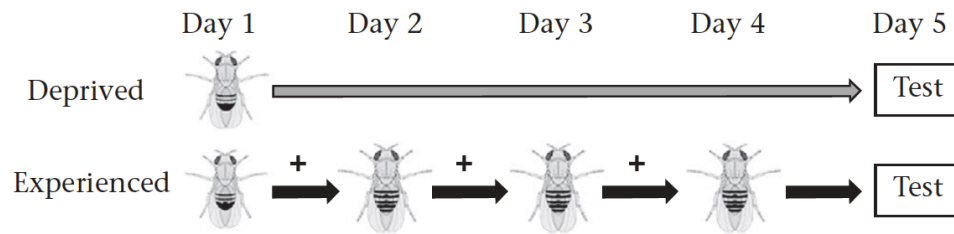
2624 5.4.2b Forced copulation with teneral females

2625 Males of the deprived treatment force-copulated with teneral females significantly
2626 more frequently than males from the experienced treatment (Cox regression: Wald $\chi^2_1 =$
2627 14.3, $N = 256$, $P < 0.001$; Fig. 5.11).

2628

2629 5.4.2c Coercive mating with recently mated females

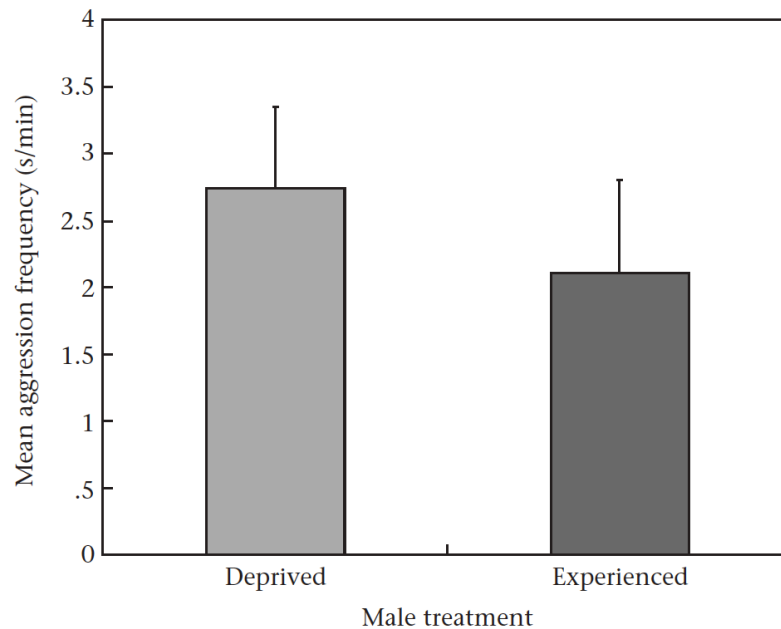
2630 Deprived males were significantly more likely to mate with recently mated females
2631 than were experienced males after the 240 min trial duration (Cox regression: Wald $\chi^2_1 =$
2632 4.2, $N = 120$, $P < 0.05$; Fig. 5.12). We also analysed the frequency of remating after 120 min
2633 and found that the difference between deprived and experienced males approached, but did
2634 not reach, significance (Cox regression: Wald $\chi^2_1 = 2.2$, $N = 120$, $P = 0.14$).



2635

2636 **Figure 5.9**

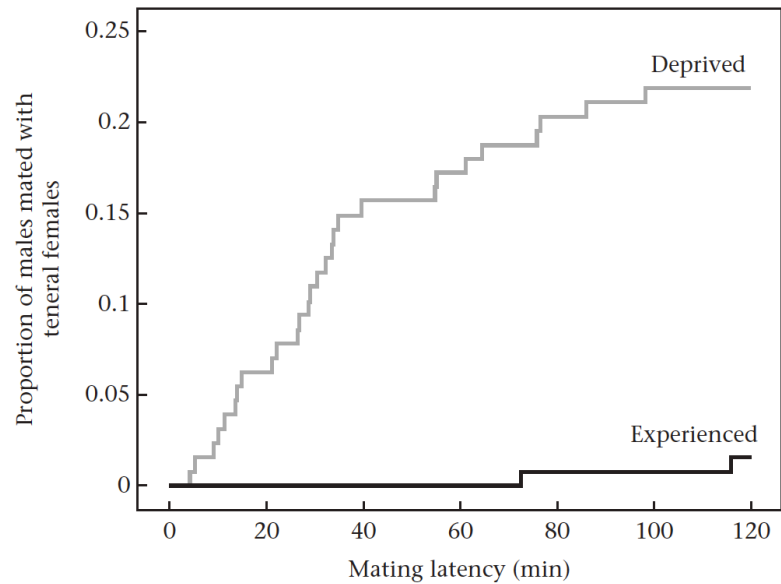
2637 Two treatments for the effects of mating experience on aggression. Males were either
2638 housed alone (deprived treatment) or housed with females (experienced treatment) until the
2639 test on day 5. One female was added to each experienced male's vial on days 2, 3 and 4.
2640 Males of both treatments were 4 days old when tested on day 5. Note that males are smaller
2641 than females and have a dark posterior.
2642



2643

2644 **Figure 5.10**

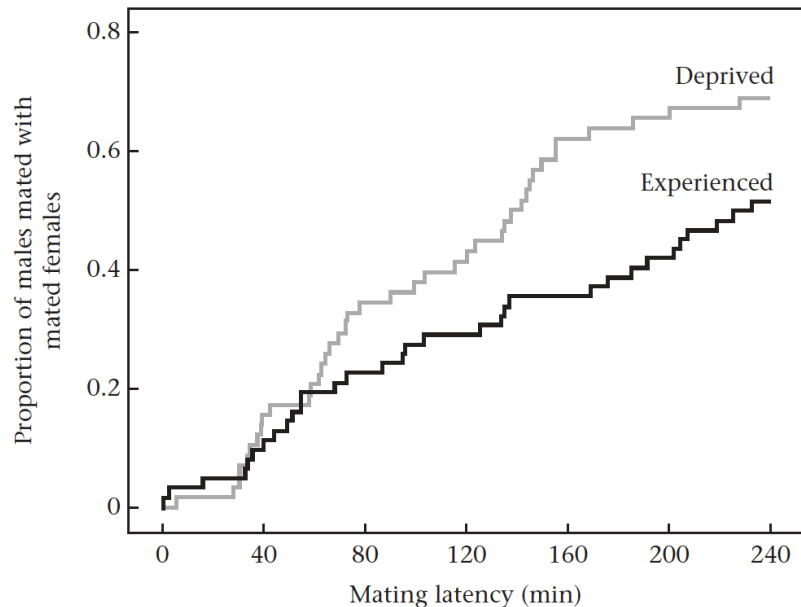
2645 Mean + SE aggression frequency per male for mating-deprived and mating-experienced
2646 males, which were paired together in arenas ($N = 40$ arenas).



2647

2648 **Figure 5.11**

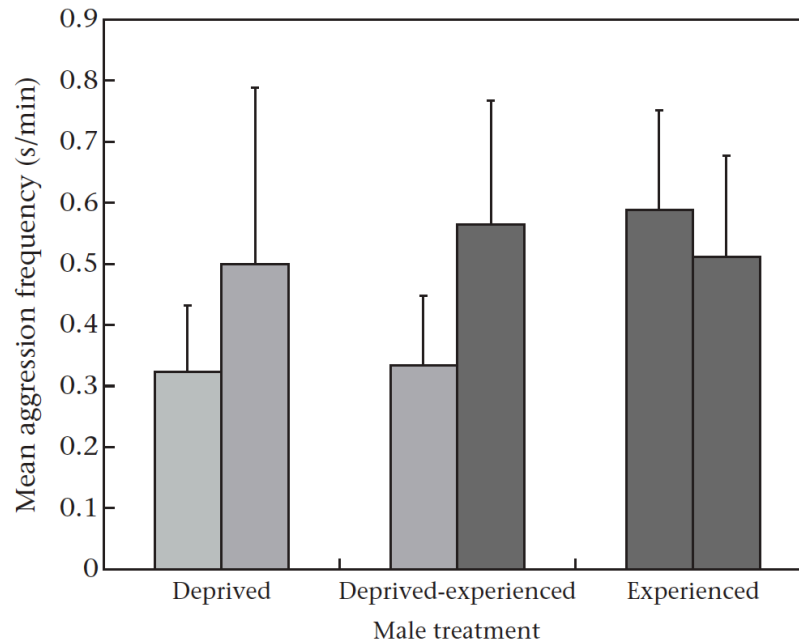
2649 The cumulative proportion of previously mating-deprived and mating-experienced males
2650 that force-copulated with teneral females across a 120 min trial duration ($N = 256$, 128 per
2651 treatment).



2652

2653 **Figure 5.12**

2654 The cumulative proportion of previously mating-deprived and mating-experienced males
2655 that mated with recently mated females across a 240 min trial duration ($N = 120$, with 58
2656 deprived males and 62 experienced males)



2657

2658 **Figure 5.13**

2659 Mean + SE aggression frequency per male for mating-deprived and mating-experienced
2660 males. There were three arena combinations that males could be placed in: two deprived
2661 males ($N = 17$ arenas), one deprived and one experienced male ($N = 16$ arenas), or two
2662 experienced males ($N = 16$ arenas).

2663 **5.5 Discussion**

2664

2665 Our major results were, first, that for all three aggression types, aggression initially
2666 increased with age and then plateaued (Figs 5.1–5.4). Second, sexually experienced males
2667 were less aggressive towards females but not towards males than were virgin males (Figs
2668 5.9–5.13). The distinct effects of sexual experience on aggression towards females and
2669 males underline the importance of studying multiple types of aggression. That is, given the
2670 complexity of the proximate and ultimate mechanisms underlying aggression (Moyer 1968;
2671 Huber & Kravitz 2010), we should not expect different types of aggression to covary. We
2672 should note that, because we did not subdivide aggression into distinct categories (e.g. wing
2673 threat and lunging), we cannot judge whether there was age-specific variation in qualitative
2674 aspects of aggression.

2675 We studied aggression using three protocols representing distinct features of fruit
2676 fly natural history. As noted in the Introduction, the role of aggression in resource defence
2677 and forced copulation had been well established. Furthermore, Hoffmann (1990)
2678 documented that 3- and 4-day-old males are more likely to be resource holders when
2679 competing with 1- and 2-day old males, respectively. This is consistent with our direct data
2680 on aggression, which indicate increased aggression between age 1 and 4 days. The role of
2681 aggression in female remating, however, had not been studied. We thus compared male–
2682 female interactions during courtship and mating in pairs consisting of a male and a virgin
2683 female versus pairs consisting of a male and a mated female. The most obvious difference
2684 between the female categories was an average mating latency of about 3 min with the virgin
2685 females and 45 min with the mated females. Intriguingly, males courted the previously
2686 mated females much more intensely than they courted virgin females in the few minutes
2687 just prior to mating (right bars in Fig. 5.6). This novel observation will require future
2688 elaboration because it might help explain males' mating success with reluctant females.
2689 The longer mating latencies and higher frequencies of kicking and lack of wing spreading
2690 with recently mated than with virgin females (Fig. 5.8) are consistent with the hypothesis
2691 that rematings by recently mated females are caused by male coercion (Thornhill & Alcock

2692 1983; Gromko et al. 1984; Arnqvist & Rowe 2005). Nevertheless, the issue of rematings in
2693 fruit flies as well as in other species requires further examination because it is not fully
2694 clear why females that can control rematings succumb to male coercion (Boulton & Shuker
2695 2016). We discuss the effects of age, sexual experience, and their interactions on the three
2696 types of male aggression below.

2697

2698 *5.5.1 Effects of age on aggression*

2699 The life history of age-specific aggression within and among species is not well
2700 understood. The limited theory focuses on male–male aggression and assumes significant
2701 injury risks. Under these conditions, models generally predict peak fighting later in life
2702 (Parker 1974; Kemp 2006). While there are excellent data about the cost of aggression in
2703 animals with the capacity to inflict injury (Table 3.1 in Huntingford & Turner 1987), the
2704 cost of aggression in species in which participants do not get wounded is unknown. In a
2705 variety of species, fighting is associated with physiological costs that increase mortality
2706 rate (Huntingford & Turner 1987). In male fruit flies, pursuit of females is associated with
2707 increased mortality rate (Cordts & Partridge 1996). It is thus likely that the major cost of
2708 male–male and male–female aggression in fruit flies is increased mortality rates associated
2709 with heightened activity. Another possible cost is the increased tendency to lose a fight
2710 after a previous loss (Hsu, Earley & Wolf 2006; Trannoy, Penn, Lucey, Popovic & Kravitz
2711 2016). Such loser effects may vary in magnitude with age and experience (Fawcett &
2712 Johnstone 2010). In nature, another cost of aggression may be elevated predation rates
2713 caused by a combination of increased detection rates by visual predators, reduced attention
2714 devoted to approaching predators (Dukas & Kamil 2000; Dukas 2002) and reduced flight
2715 initiation distance (Ydenberg & Dill 1986; Jakobsson, Brick & Kullberg 1995; Brick 1998;
2716 Cooper 1999).

2717 Assuming that aggression, even with no injury risk, increases mortality rate, then
2718 the reluctance of young male fruit flies to engage in aggression towards either males or
2719 females can be explained by their higher residual reproductive value compared to that of
2720 older males (Parker 1974; Kemp 2006). It is likely that experience plays a role as well.

2721 Under this scenario, the default strategy of young males is to initially seek reproductive
2722 opportunities that do not involve aggression. After failing to secure matings with the
2723 peaceful tactic, the males gradually increase their motivation to fight with males over high-
2724 quality resources and to coerce females. Our experiments on the effect of sexual experience
2725 indeed indicate that it plays a key role in shaping the trajectory of age-specific aggression.
2726

2727 *5.5.2 Effects of sexual experience on aggression*

2728 Assuming that aggression is more costly than peaceful alternatives, males should
2729 avoid fighting and coercion if they can gain copulations using peaceful options. The
2730 obvious peaceful tactics are direct pursuit of females without engaging in aggression with
2731 males (i.e. scramble competition; Spieth 1974; Thornhill & Alcock 1983; Andersson 1994)
2732 and quick departure from females that provide clear rejection signals (Spieth 1952;
2733 Connolly & Cook 1973; Dukas & Scott 2015). The relative fitness costs to males of the
2734 aggressive and peaceful strategies, however, are unknown. Nevertheless, our results are
2735 consistent with the notion that aggression in fruit flies is more costly than peaceful options
2736 because males that had had access to virgin females were much less likely to engage in
2737 forced copulation with teneral females or to engage in coercion of recently mated females
2738 (Figs 5.11 and 5.12). A nonmutually exclusive alternative is that the fitness benefit from
2739 coercive matings is lower than that from consensual matings with virgin females. This is
2740 indeed the case for forced copulations with teneral females, which result in lower paternity
2741 than do consensual matings with virgin females (Dukas & Jongsma 2012b). Owing to last-
2742 male precedence, however, paternity from coercive matings with previously mated females
2743 may be comparable to that from consensual matings with virgin females because the latter
2744 females may end up remating as well (Gromko et al. 1984).

2745 Two studies have documented that previously mated male fruit flies exercise more
2746 stringent mating criteria than do virgin males as indicated by their stronger preferences for
2747 large over small females and virgin over mated females (Byrne & Rice 2006; Baxter et al.
2748 2015b). These data agree with our interpretation that males consider aggressive pursuit of
2749 females as a lesser option than seeking sexually receptive females. Consequently, males

2750 that have encountered and mated with virgin females are less likely to engage in coercive
2751 matings than are virgin males of the same age.

2752 The effect of sexual experience on male–male aggression is more complicated than
2753 its effect on male–female aggression. As with male–female aggression, we expected
2754 previously mated males to be less willing than virgin males to engage in presumably costly
2755 fighting with other males. The major function of male–male aggression in fruit flies,
2756 however, is securing an attractive resource frequented by females seeking nutritious food
2757 and egg-laying sites. Hence males successful at mating probably perceive a food resource
2758 as more valuable than do virgin males. Such higher estimates of a resource value by mated
2759 males can lead to a greater motivation to defend it via aggression. At least one other study
2760 documented that experience with females increased males’ motivation to fight. In the
2761 speckled wood butterfly, *Pararge aegeria*, males exposed to females in the territory
2762 persisted in fighting against intruders longer and were more likely to win the contest than
2763 were males that did not encounter a female (Bergman, Olofsson & Wiklund 2010). Data
2764 from house crickets, *Acheta domesticus*, however, have been inconsistent, with one study
2765 suggesting decreased aggression (Brown, Smith, Moskalik & Gabriel 2006) and another
2766 indicating increased aggression by sexually experienced males (Killian & Allen 2008).

2767 Overall then, sexual experience may not affect male–male aggression in the context
2768 of resource defence because both female-deprived and mated males should have a high
2769 motivation to fight. Indeed, we observed no effects of sexual experience on male-male
2770 aggression in two experiments (Figs 5.10 and 5.13). We conducted another experiment
2771 assessing the effect of experience on male aggression in the context of resource defence in
2772 order to resolve the disagreement between our results (Fig. 5.10) and those of Yuan et al.
2773 (2014), who reported decreased aggression in males previously housed with females. Yuan
2774 et al. (2014), however, employed a novel protocol in which each male had to mate with a
2775 virgin female just prior to the recording of contest. A weakness of this protocol is that, if
2776 one of the two males did not mate, the trial was discarded. If a male’s reduced probability
2777 of mating is associated with his aggressiveness, this can lead to biased results. Furthermore,
2778 we have shown that males in the presence of their recent mates show heightened aggression

2779 associated with adaptive mate guarding (Baxter et al. 2015a). Nevertheless, even when we
2780 employed the protocol of Yuan et al. (2014), we unequivocally failed to find decreased
2781 aggression in males previously housed with females (Fig. 5.13). We cannot resolve this
2782 discrepancy at this point.

2783

2784 *5.5.3 Conclusions*

2785 Our simultaneous assessment of the effects of age and sexual experience on three
2786 types of aggression allows us to draw a general picture of the life history of aggression in
2787 fruit flies. This depiction may be relevant for many other weaponless species with a plastic
2788 mating system of resource defence polygyny under low density and dispersed, defendable
2789 resources, or scramble competition otherwise. Young males shun aggression towards both
2790 males and females most likely because it inflicts costs that decrease expected life span.
2791 Males that succeed in matings may maintain their low aggression levels. Males that fail at
2792 acquiring mates gradually increase their motivation to persist in pursuing both teneral
2793 females for forced copulations and previously mated females, which may be coerced into
2794 remating. It is likely that, in settings where most matings occur at resources defended by
2795 capable males, males' motivation to fight increases with age so that they can either acquire
2796 or maintain an attractive resource. In that setting, we do not expect males to ever decrease
2797 their level of aggression because matings inform them of the high attractiveness of the
2798 resource they currently defend. While the divergent effects of sexual experience on
2799 aggression towards females versus other males is clearly adaptive, it suggests distinct
2800 underlying mechanisms that can be examined in future work.

2801

2802 **5.6 Acknowledgments**

2803

2804 We thank L. Dukas for comments on the manuscript, two anonymous referees for insightful
2805 comments, A. Scott, E. Dawes, I. Shams, L. Salvo and Y. Hachitori for assistance, and the
2806 Natural Sciences and Engineering Research Council of Canada, Canada Foundation for
2807 Innovation and Ontario Ministry of Research and Innovation for funding.

2808 **5.7 References**

2809

2810 Abrams, P. A. 1993. Does increased mortality favor the evolution of more rapid senescence.
2811 *Evolution*, 47, 877–887.

2812 Andersson, M. 1994. *Sexual selection*. Princeton, NJ: Princeton University Press.

2813 Anholt, R. R. H., & Mackay, T. F. C. 2012. Genetics of aggression. *Annual Review of*
2814 *Genetics*, 46, 145–164.

2815 Arnqvist, G., & Rowe, L. 2005. *Sexual conflict*. Princeton, NJ: Princeton University Press.

2816 Baron, R. A., & Richardson, D. R. 2004. *Human aggression*. New York, NY: Plenum.

2817 Baxter, C. M., Barnett, R., & Dukas, R. 2015a. Aggression, mate guarding, and fitness in
2818 male fruit flies. *Animal Behaviour*, 109, 235–241.

2819 Baxter, C. M., Barnett, R., & Dukas, R. 2015b. Effects of age and experience on male mate
2820 choosiness. *Ethology*, 121, 353–363.

2821 Bergman, M., Olofsson, M., & Wiklund, C. 2010. Contest outcome in a territorial butterfly:
2822 the role of motivation. *Proceedings of the Royal Society B: Biological Sciences*,
2823 277(1696), 3027–3033. doi:10.1098/rspb.2010.0646.

2824 Boulton, R. A., & Shuker, D. M. 2016. Polyandry is context dependent but not convenient
2825 in a mostly monandrous wasp. *Animal Behaviour*, 112, 119–125.

2826 Bretman, A., Fricke, C., & Chapman, T. 2009. Plastic responses of male *Drosophila*
2827 *melanogaster* to the level of sperm competition increase male reproductive fitness.
2828 *Proceedings of the Royal Society B: Biological Sciences*, 276, 1705–1711.

2829 Brick, O. 1998. Fighting behaviour, vigilance and predation risk in the cichlid fish
2830 *Nannacara anomala*. *Animal Behaviour*, 56, 309–317.

2831 Briffa, M., & Elwood, R. W. 2001. Decision rules, energy metabolism and vigour of
2832 hermit-crab fights. *Proceedings of the Royal Society B: Biological Sciences*, 268,
2833 1841–1848.

2834 Brown, W. D., Smith, A. T., Moskalik, B., & Gabriel, J. 2006. Aggressive contests in house
2835 crickets: size, motivation and the information content of aggressive songs. *Animal*
2836 *Behaviour*, 72, 225–233.

2837 Byrne, P. G., & Rice, W. R. 2006. Evidence for adaptive male mate choice in the fruit fly
2838 *Drosophila melanogaster*. *Proceedings of the Royal Society B: Biological Sciences*,
2839 273, 917–922.

2840 Byrne, P. G., Rice, G. R., & Rice, W. R. 2008. Effect of a refuge from persistent male
2841 courtship in the *Drosophila* laboratory environment. *Integrative and Comparative*
2842 *Biology*, 48, E1–E7.

2843 Chen, S., Lee, A. Y., Bowens, N. M., Huber, R., & Kravitz, E. A. 2002. Fighting fruit flies:
2844 A model system for the study of aggression. *Proceedings of the National Academy of*
2845 *Sciences of the United States of America*, 99, 5664–5668.

2846 Clutton-Brock, T. H., Guinness, F. E., & Albon, S. D. 1982. *Red deer: behavior and ecology*
2847 *of two sexes*. Chicago, IL: University of Chicago Press.

2848 Connolly, K., & Cook, R. 1973. Rejection responses by female *Drosophila melanogaster*:
2849 their ontogeny, causality and effects upon the behaviour of the courting male.
2850 *Behaviour*, 44, 142–166.

2851 Cooper, W. E. 1999. Tradeoffs between courtship, fighting, and antipredatory behavior by

- 2852 a lizard, *Eumeces laticeps*. *Behavioral Ecology and Sociobiology*, 47, 54–59.
- 2853 Cordts, R., & Partridge, L. 1996. Courtship reduces longevity of male *Drosophila*
2854 *melanogaster*. *Animal Behaviour*, 52, 269–278.
- 2855 Daly, M., & Wilson, M. 1988. *Homicide*. New York, NY: A. de Gruyter.
- 2856 Daly, M. 2016. *Killing the competition: Economic inequality and homicide*. New
2857 Brunswick, NJ: Transaction.
- 2858 Davies, N. B. 1978. Territorial defence in the speckled wood butterfly (*Pararge aegeria*):
2859 the resident always wins. *Animal Behaviour*, 26, 138–147.
- 2860 Dierick, H. A., & Greenspan, R. J. 2006. Molecular analysis of flies selected for aggressive
2861 behavior. *Nature Genetics*, 38, 1023–1031.
- 2862 Dow, M. A., & Schilcher, F. V. 1975. Aggression and mating success in *Drosophila*
2863 *melanogaster*. *Nature*, 254, 511–512.
- 2864 Dukas, R., & Visscher, P. K. 1994. Lifetime learning by foraging honey bees. *Animal*
2865 *Behaviour*, 48, 1007–1012.
- 2866 Dukas, R., & Kamil, A. C. 2000. The cost of limited attention in blue jays. *Behavioral*
2867 *Ecology*, 11, 502–506.
- 2868 Dukas, R. 2002. Behavioural and ecological consequences of limited attention.
2869 *Philosophical Transactions of the Royal Society B: Biological Sciences*, 357, 1539–
2870 1548.
- 2871 Dukas, R. 2008a. Bee senescence in the wild. *Insectes Sociaux*, 55, 252–255.
- 2872 Dukas, R. 2008b. Life history of learning: performance curves of honeybees in the wild.
2873 *Ethology*, 114, 1195–1200.
- 2874 Dukas, R., & Dukas, L. 2012. Learning about prospective mates in male fruit flies: effects
2875 of acceptance and rejection. *Animal Behaviour*, 84, 1427–1434.
- 2876 Dukas, R., & Jongsma, K. 2012a. Effects of forced copulations on female sexual
2877 attractiveness in fruit flies. *Animal Behaviour*, 84, 1501–1505.
- 2878 Dukas, R., & Jongsma, K. 2012b. Costs to females and benefits to males from forced
2879 copulations in fruit flies. *Animal Behaviour*, 84, 1177–1182.
- 2880 Dukas, R., & Baxter, C. M. 2014. Mate choosiness in young male fruit flies. *Behavioral*
2881 *Ecology*, 25, 549–552.
- 2882 Dukas, R., & Scott, A. 2015. Fruit fly courtship: the female perspective. *Current Zoology*,
2883 61, 1008–1014.
- 2884 Edwards, A. C., Rollmann, S. M., Morgan, T. J., & Mackay, T. F. 2006. Quantitative
2885 genomics of aggressive behavior in *Drosophila melanogaster*. *PLoS Genetics*, 2,
2886 e154.
- 2887 Edwards, A. C., Ayroles, J. F., Stone, E. A., Carbone, M. A., Lyman, R. F., & Mackay, T.
2888 2009. A transcriptional network associated with natural variation in *Drosophila*
2889 aggressive behavior. *Genome Biology*, 10, R76. doi:10.1186/gb-2009-10-7-r76.
- 2890 Elwood, R., & Neil, S. 1991. *Assessments and decisions: A study of information gathering*
2891 *by hermit crabs*. Dordrecht: Springer Netherlands.
- 2892 Elwood, R. W., & Prenter, J. 2013. Aggression in spiders. In I. C. W. Hardy & M. Briffa
2893 (Eds.), *Animal contests* (pp. 113–133). Cambridge, U.K.: Cambridge University
2894 Press.
- 2895 Farrington, D. P. 1986. Age and crime. *Crime and Justice*, 7, 189–250.

- 2896 Fawcett, T. W., & Johnstone, R. A. 2010. Learning your own strength: winner and loser
2897 effects should change with age and experience. *Proceedings of the Royal Society B:*
2898 *Biological Sciences*, 277, 1427–1434.
- 2899 Gromko, M. H., Gilbert, D. G., & Richmond, R. C. 1984. Sperm transfer and use in the
2900 multiple mating system of *Drosophila*. In R. L. Smith (Ed.), *Sperm competition and*
2901 *the evolution of animal mating systems* (pp. 371–425). Orlando, FL: Academic Press.
- 2902 Hardy, I. C. W., & Briffa, M. 2013. *Animal contests*. Cambridge, U.K.: Cambridge
2903 University Press.
- 2904 Hoffmann, A. A. 1987. A laboratory study of male territoriality in the sibling species
2905 *Drosophila melanogaster* and *D. simulans*. *Animal Behaviour*, 35, 807–818.
- 2906 Hoffmann, A. A. 1990. The influence of age and experience with conspecifics on territorial
2907 behavior in *Drosophila melanogaster*. *Journal of Insect Behavior*, 3, 1–12.
- 2908 Hsu, Y., Earley, R. L., & Wolf, L. L. 2006. Modulation of aggressive behaviour by fighting
2909 experience: mechanisms and contest outcomes. *Biological Reviews*, 81, 33–74.
- 2910 Huber, R., & Kravitz, E. A. 2010. Aggression: towards an integration of gene, brain and
2911 behaviour. In T. Székely, A. J. Moore & J. Komdeur (Eds.), *Social behaviour: Genes,*
2912 *ecology and evolution* (pp. 165–180). Cambridge, U.K.: Cambridge University Press.
- 2913 Huntingford, F., & Turner, A. K. 1987. *Animal conflict*. London, U.K.: Chapman & Hall.
- 2914 IBM. 2013. *IBM SPSS statistics for Windows* (Version 22). Armonk, NY: IBM Corporation.
- 2915 Jakobsson, S., Brick, O., & Kullberg, C. 1995. Escalated fighting behaviour incurs
2916 increased predation risk. *Animal Behaviour*, 49, 235–239.
- 2917 Jennings, D. J., & Gammel, M. P. 2013. Contest behaviour in ungulates. In I. C. W. Hardy
2918 & M. Briffa (Eds.), *Animal contests* (pp. xx–xx). Cambridge, U.K.: Cambridge
2919 University Press.
- 2920 Kemp, D. J. 2006. Ageing, reproductive value, and the evolution of lifetime fighting
2921 behaviour. *Biological Journal of the Linnean Society*, 88, 565–578.
- 2922 Kemp, D. J. 2013. Contest behaviour in butterflies: fighting without weapons. In I. C. W.
2923 Hardy & M. Briffa (Eds.), *Animal contests* (pp. 134–146). Cambridge, U.K.:
2924 Cambridge University Press.
- 2925 Killian, K. A., & Allen, J. R. 2008. Mating resets male cricket aggression. *Journal of Insect*
2926 *Behavior*, 21, 535–548.
- 2927 Markow, T. A. 1988. Reproductive behavior of *Drosophila melanogaster* and *D.*
2928 *nigrospiracula* in the field and in the laboratory. *Journal of Comparative Psychology*,
2929 102, 169–173.
- 2930 Markow, T. A. 2000. Forced matings in natural populations of *Drosophila*. *American*
2931 *Naturalist*, 156, 100–103.
- 2932 Moyer, K. E. 1968. Kinds of aggression and their physiological basis. *Communications in*
2933 *Behavioral Biology*, 2, 65–87.
- 2934 Nelson, R. J. 2005. *Biology of aggression*. New York, NY: Oxford University Press.
- 2935 Parker, G. A. 1974. Assessment strategy and the evolution of fighting behaviour. *Journal*
2936 *of Theoretical Biology*, 47, 223–243.
- 2937 Quetelet, A. 1833. *Adolphe Quetelet's research on the propensity for crime at different*
2938 *ages*. Cincinnati, OH: Anderson.
- 2939 Reiss, A. J., & Roth, J. A. 1993. *Understanding and preventing violence*. Washington, D.C.:

- 2940 National Academies Press.
- 2941 Riechert, S. E. 1986. Spider fights as a test of evolutionary game theory. *American Scientist*,
2942 74, 604–610.
- 2943 Roff, D. 2002. *Life history evolution*. Sunderland, MA: Sinauer.
- 2944 Seeley, C., & Dukas, R. 2011. Teneral matings in fruit flies: male coercion and female
2945 response. *Animal Behaviour*, 81, 595–601.
- 2946 Spieth, H. T. 1952. Mating behavior within the genus *Drosophila* (Diptera). *Bulletin of the*
2947 *American Museum of Natural History*, 99, 395–474.
- 2948 Spieth, H. T. 1974. Courtship behavior in *Drosophila*. *Annual Review of Entomology*, 19,
2949 383–406.
- 2950 Stamps, J. A. 1978. A field study of the ontogeny of social behavior in the lizard *Anolis*
2951 *aeneus*. *Behaviour*, 66, 1–31.
- 2952 Stearns, S. 1992. *The evolution of life histories*. Oxford, U.K.: Oxford University Press.
- 2953 Thornhill, R., & Alcock, J. 1983. *The evolution of insect mating systems*. Cambridge, MA:
2954 Harvard University Press.
- 2955 Trannoy, S., Penn, J., Lucey, K., Popovic, D., & Kravitz, E. A. 2016. Short and long-lasting
2956 behavioral consequences of agonistic encounters between male *Drosophila*
2957 *melanogaster*. *Proceedings of the National Academy of Sciences of the United States*
2958 *of America*, 113, 4818–4823.
- 2959 Wigby, S., & Chapman, T. 2004. Female resistance to male harm evolves in response to
2960 manipulation of sexual conflict. *Evolution*, 58, 1028–1037.
- 2961 Williams, P. D., Day, T., Fletcher, Q., & Rowe, L. 2006. The shaping of senescence in the
2962 wild. *Trends in Ecology & Evolution*, 21, 458–463.
- 2963 Ydenberg, R. C., & Dill, L. M. 1986. The economics of fleeing from predators. *Advances*
2964 *in the Study of Behavior*, 16, 229–249.
- 2965 Yuan, Q., Song, Y., Yang, C.-H., Jan, L. Y., & Jan, Y. N. 2014. Female contact modulates
2966 male aggression via a sexually dimorphic GABAergic circuit in *Drosophila*. *Nature*
2967 *Neuroscience*, 17, 81–88.
- 2968 Zhou, C., Rao, Y., & Rao, Y. 2008. A subset of octopaminergic neurons are important for
2969 *Drosophila* aggression. *Nature Neuroscience*, 11, 1059–1067.
- 2970

2971 **CHAPTER 6 – GENETIC VARIATION IN SEXUAL AGGRESSION AND THE**
2972 **FACTORS THAT DETERMINE FORCED COPULATION SUCCESS**

2973

2974 Baxter, C. M., Yan, J. L. & Dukas, R. (in press) Genetic variation in sexual aggression and
2975 the factors that determine forced-copulation success. *Animal Behaviour*.

2976

2977 **6.1 Abstract**

2978

2979 Sexual conflict is common in nature and sometimes results in sexual aggression. An
2980 extreme case is forced copulation, where one individual forcibly mates with another
2981 individual who resists the mating. To understand what makes some males sexually
2982 aggressive, we established an experimental system that allowed us to quantify the
2983 characteristics that contribute to males' forced copulation success. In fruit flies (*Drosophila*
2984 *melanogaster*), sexually mature females can choose to accept or reject courting males;
2985 however, males can forcibly copulate with newly eclosed, sexually immature, teneral
2986 females. We tested males from 59 genotypes and found significant genetic variation in
2987 forced copulation success, with a broad sense heritability of 0.16. We then chose three
2988 genotypes with the lowest and three with the highest forced copulation success rates and
2989 compared the behaviour of males from these two groups. Males from genotypes with high
2990 forced copulation success were more persistent in their pursuit of teneral females and
2991 mounted them more frequently than did males from the low-success genotypes. Males of
2992 the two categories, however, were similar in their attractiveness to both teneral and sexually
2993 mature females. Our results suggest that males vary in their pursuit strategies. Some males
2994 respond to female rejection signals by giving up and searching for receptive females, while
2995 other males persist in pursuit and coercion in spite of female objection. Our work highlights
2996 the practicality of using forced copulation in fruit flies as a model for further research on
2997 the mechanisms affecting variation in sexual coercion and forced copulation success and
2998 their evolutionary consequences.

2999

3000

3001 **Keywords:** aggression, coercion, *Drosophila melanogaster*, forced copulation, fruit flies,
3002 genetic variation, heritability, sexual conflict

3003

3004 **6.2 Introduction**

3005

3006 Sexual reproduction was once thought to involve cooperation between males and females
3007 in their mutually beneficial endeavor to create offspring. However, it has long been
3008 understood that the optimal reproductive strategies for males and females differ, creating
3009 an opportunity for conflict between the sexes (Parker, 1979). Studies of sexual conflict have
3010 since greatly influenced our understanding of evolution via sexual selection (Arnqvist &
3011 Rowe, 2005).

3012 Sexual conflict can be quite subtle, such as males exploiting pre-existing sensory
3013 biases in females for their own reproductive advantage. An example of this is seen in
3014 guppies (*Poecilia reticula*), where females are attracted to males with orange spots due to
3015 a general, innate attraction to orange objects, which is common to both sexes (Rodd,
3016 Hughes, Grether, & Baril, 2002). However, conflict can also be overt, such as when males
3017 aggressively coerce, force or intimidate females into mating. Males can use harassment and
3018 aggression to coerce unreceptive females into accepting a mating, as seen, for example, in
3019 water striders (Rowe, Arnqvist, Sih, & Krupa, 1994). *Gerris gracilicornis* females are
3020 under greater predation risk than males. Males exploit this higher vulnerability by creating
3021 ripples that attract predators while mounting females, and only stop this activity once
3022 mating begins (Han & Jablonski, 2009, 2010). Aggression can be used to directly forcibly
3023 copulate with females, such as in Lake Eyre dragons (*Ctenophorus maculosus*) (McLean,
3024 Chan, Dickerson, Moussalli, & Stuart-Fox, 2016; Olsson, 1995), waterfowl (McKinney,
3025 Derrickson, & Mineau, 1983; McKinney & Evarts, 1997) and wolf spiders (*Schizocosa*
3026 *ocreata*) (Johns, Roberts, Clark, & Uetz, 2009). In such cases, males can attack and pin
3027 down a female, causing injury to the female and forcibly mate with her while she resists
3028 the mating. Finally, males can also use aggression as a long-term sexual intimidation tactic,
3029 where their aggression towards females is temporally-decoupled from their mating, and
3030 leads to increased mating success in Chacma baboons (*Papio ursinus*) (Baniel, Cowlshaw,

3031 & Huchard, 2017), and increased paternity in Kasekela chimpanzees (*Pan troglodytes*
3032 *schweinfurthii*) (Feldblum et al., 2014).

3033 Fruit flies (*Drosophila melanogaster*) are an important model system for studying
3034 sexual conflict, with a strong focus on post-mating conflict (Chapman, Liddle, Kalb,
3035 Wolfner, & Partridge, 1995; Filice & Long, 2016; Laturney & Billeter, 2016; Rice et al.,
3036 2006). As for examples of sexual coercion in fruit flies, it has been shown that females are
3037 more likely to remate after long periods of persistent male pursuit, when females have no
3038 refuge from males, and particularly when the ratio of males to females is high, which
3039 suggests that males are harassing females into remating (Byrne, Rice, & Rice, 2008; Wigby
3040 & Chapman, 2004). Recently mated females are also more likely than virgin females to
3041 resist during mating by kicking the males and keeping their wings closed, hence reducing
3042 the ability of the males to mount securely (Baxter & Dukas, 2017). However, it can be
3043 difficult to distinguish between female resistance to male coercion and female mate
3044 screening, where females reject all males initially and then only accept males who
3045 demonstrate they are of high quality by persisting in their mating attempts. Since mate
3046 screening relies on the ability of a female to exercise control over the occurrence of mating,
3047 situations in which the female cannot prevent copulation can provide us with unambiguous
3048 examples of male coercion. Female fruit flies are typically able to reject males and prevent
3049 intromission. Therefore, although they can still be coerced into mating, using them as a
3050 model to study male coercion presents the difficulty of ruling out possible mate screening.
3051 In the first two hours post eclosion, however, females are in a teneral stage where their
3052 wings are still curled, their cuticle is soft, and their vaginal plates have not yet hardened.
3053 Since teneral females cannot either fly or physically prevent intromission by males who
3054 have mounted them, they can be forcibly copulated by sexually mature males, and these
3055 forced copulations occur both in nature and under laboratory conditions (Markow, 2000).
3056 Teneral females attempt to flee from males who persistently pursue them, and females who
3057 are forcibly copulated suffer significant costs, including wing damage, early mortality and
3058 reduced reproductive success, while males benefit from these matings because they father
3059 some offspring (Dukas & Jongsma, 2012a; Seeley & Dukas, 2011). Because matings with

3060 sexually immature, teneral females are unambiguously forced, they provide us with a clear
3061 model system for experimental research on aggressive manifestations of sexual conflict.

3062 In laboratory studies with fruit flies, approximately 20-40% of males forcibly
3063 copulate when presented with a teneral female (Dukas & Jongsma, 2012b; Markow, 2000;
3064 Seeley & Dukas, 2011). So, why is it that some males aggressively force copulate while
3065 others do not? One potential explanation is that males who cannot obtain consensual
3066 matings resort to aggressively coercing females to mate, such as in scorpion flies (*Panorpa*
3067 *latipennis*), where males who have not obtained the nuptial gifts necessary for consensual
3068 mating will attempt to aggressively force copulate with females (Thornhill, 1980).
3069 However, this is certainly not true in all cases; for example, in waterfowl, it is generally the
3070 males who are already pair-bonded who engage in forced copulations (McKinney et al.,
3071 1983; McKinney & Evarts, 1997). And in wolf spiders, only approximately 30% of males
3072 who have been rejected by a female end up forcibly copulating with her (Johns, 2007; Johns
3073 et al., 2009), so not all males faced with rejection perform forced copulations. What
3074 contributes to the variation in forced copulation rates across males who are faced with the
3075 same circumstances?

3076 Our goal was to examine the behavioural determinants of forced copulation success.
3077 We first assessed the genetic variation in forced copulation success across 59 male
3078 genotypes (using a standard genotype for all teneral females), allowing us to estimate the
3079 broad-sense heritability of forced copulation success. Based on these results, we chose three
3080 genotypes with the highest and three genotypes with the lowest forced copulation rates to
3081 perform follow-up experiments with detailed behavioural observations of forced copulation
3082 trials. We predicted that males from the ‘high’ success genotypes would be more persistent
3083 and perform more coercive actions when pursuing teneral females than males of the ‘low’
3084 success genotypes. Additionally, we quantified teneral females’ behaviour while being
3085 pursued by males and predicted that females would be less resistant to males with ‘high’
3086 success genotypes, thus facilitating these males’ higher forced copulation rates. Finally, we
3087 tested males’ mating success with mature virgin females, who have full control over
3088 mating. If higher quality males are more likely to overcome teneral female resistance and

3089 thus succeed in forced copulations, then we would expect that these males would also have
3090 higher mating success with mature virgin females. However, if lower quality males are
3091 more motivated to perform forced copulations, then we would expect such males to have
3092 lower mating success with mature virgin females.

3093

3094 **6.3 General methods**

3095

3096 We used a subset of 60 Wolbachia-free lines from the *Drosophila* Genetic Reference Panel
3097 (DGRP). Mackay et al., (2012) generated these lines by collecting wild mated females in
3098 Raleigh, North Carolina, USA and then inbreeding their offspring for 20 generations of
3099 full-sibling mating. We housed all lines in standard fly vials with 5mL of our standard food
3100 medium (1L = 90 g sucrose, 75 g cornmeal, 10 g carrageenan, 32 g yeast, and 2 g methyl
3101 paraben dissolved in 20 mL ethanol). We maintained all flies in an environmental chamber
3102 at 25°C and 50% relative humidity with a 12h light:dark cycle with the lights turning on at
3103 10:00am.

3104 Zwarts et al., (2015) found that the majority of DGRP lines suffer from neurological
3105 defects, which they attributed to the fixation of recessive mutations affecting the
3106 architecture of the mushroom bodies. Their analyses indeed identified 24 genes directly
3107 linked to mushroom body defects. In order to lessen such deleterious effects, we crossed
3108 males from 59 distinct DGRP lines to females from a single line (DGRP-83) to create F1
3109 hybrid flies. While such crossing generally reduces inbreeding depression (Charlesworth
3110 & Willis, 2009), its specific effect on the mushroom body has not been quantified. To
3111 generate the hybrids, we collected virgin females of DGRP-83 within eight hours of
3112 eclosion using light CO₂ anaesthesia and housed them in groups of 15 per food vial
3113 sprinkled with live yeast to stimulate egg laying. Once females were three to five days old,
3114 we transferred eight DGRP-83 females and five young males (one to four days old) from
3115 each one of 59 DGRP lines into food vials with live yeast. We transferred these parental
3116 flies of the 59 hybrid crosses to new food vials with live yeast daily and scraped excess
3117 eggs from the vials to ensure a consistent rearing density across lines. Eleven days after

3118 egg laying, we collected by gentle aspiration the F1 hybrid flies (hereafter hybrid
3119 genotypes) within 8h of eclosion to ensure virginity and aspirated them into individual food
3120 vials. We tested these males when they were four days old.

3121 We conducted all trials within +/- 2h of the flies' subjective dawn. This period is
3122 associated with the morning peak of fly activity in most studies (Green et al. 2015) and has
3123 been verified in our laboratory (RD unpublished). We tested all flies in polystyrene Petri
3124 dishes that were 35mm in diameter and 8mm high. We covered the floor of each arena with
3125 a piece of filter paper and coated the walls and ceilings of the arenas with Surfasil (Sigma
3126 Aldrich, Oakville, ON, Canada). Surfasil is a siliconizing agent that, when dry, forms an
3127 odourless slippery film that the flies cannot walk on, thus restricting the flies to the base of
3128 the arena.

3129 Since we wished to test for genetic variation in male propensity to forcibly copulate,
3130 males from the above-mentioned 59 hybrid genotypes were our focal individuals. In order
3131 to reduce variation in the response of the teneral females, we used females of a single
3132 reference line. We chose to use females of DGRP-83 as our teneral females, as they would
3133 be equally related by descent to males of each hybrid genotype. It is likely that females also
3134 possess genetic variation in susceptibility to forced copulation and that there is male by
3135 female interactions, but these topics are beyond the scope of our research.

3136

3137 *Ethics Statement*

3138 Our research complied with all applicable laws and did not require approval from
3139 an ethics committee.

3140

3141 **6.4 Genetic variation in forced copulation success**

3142

3143 *6.4.1 Methods*

3144 We collected teneral females of DGRP-83 within a few minutes of eclosion and
3145 aspirated one teneral female and one 4-day-old hybrid male into each arena. Observers
3146 blind to the focal males' hybrid genotypes continuously scanned the arenas for the presence

3147 of mating for a maximum of two hours. Trials occurred on 13 test days within a 15-day
3148 period. We tested two to four males per hybrid genotype per day, resulting in a final sample
3149 size of 43-46 males per hybrid genotype, with the exception of hybrid genotype 894 for
3150 which we were only able to collect and test 34 males.

3151

3152 *6.4.2 Statistical Analyses*

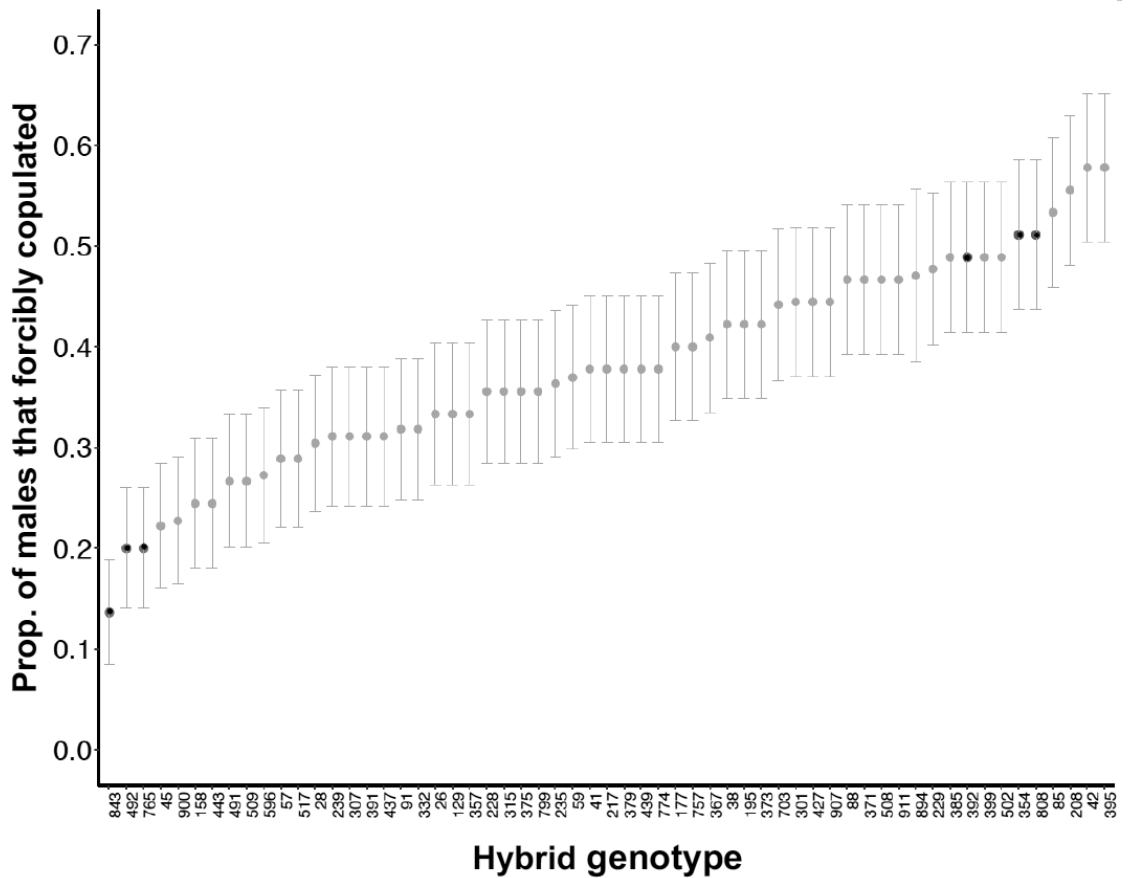
3153 We used a generalized linear mixed-effects models (GLMM) in R version 3.3.2 (R-
3154 Core-Team, 2016) with the package lme4 version 1.1-12 (Bates et al., 2015). We used a
3155 binomial distribution to model the occurrence of forced copulation during the 2h trials, with
3156 hybrid genotype and test day as random factors. To assess the significance of the random
3157 effect of hybrid genotype, we report p-values calculated as the fraction of parametric
3158 bootstrapped likelihood ratio test (LRT) statistics (with 10 000 iterations) that were larger
3159 than the observed LRT values, using the package pbkrtest version 0.4-7 (Halekoh and
3160 Hojsgaard 2014).

3161 We also calculated broad sense heritability (H^2) as $V_G / (V_G + V_E)$, where V_G is the
3162 genetic variance (i.e. the among-hybrid genotype variance) and V_E is the environmental
3163 variance (i.e. residual variance from the model). We multiplied the among-hybrid genotype
3164 variance by two because all hybrid genotypes had genetically identical mothers from
3165 DGRP-83.

3166

3167 *6.4.3 Results*

3168 We found significant variation in forced copulation success across hybrid genotypes
3169 (LRT $p < 0.01$, Fig. 6.1). The broad-sense heritability of forced copulation success was 0.16.



3170
3171

3172 **Figure 6.1**

3173 Genetic variation in male forced copulation success shown as the proportion ± 1 SE of trials
3174 that resulted in forced copulation for 59 hybrid genotypes. The points are ordered along the
3175 x axis by increasing proportion and are labeled according to the paternal DGRP line of each
3176 hybrid genotype. The three ‘low’ and three ‘high’ forced copulation success genotypes used
3177 in the determinants of forced copulation success experiment are shown in black.

3178 **6.5 Determinants of forced copulation success of ‘low’ and ‘high’ hybrid genotypes**

3179

3180 *6.5.1 Methods*

3181 In order to perform detailed video observations of the males’ behaviours leading up
3182 to forced copulation, we chose to test a subset of six genotypes and shorten the trial duration
3183 to one hour. Based on the data from the previous experiment, we chose three hybrid
3184 genotypes that had the lowest and three that had the highest forced copulation rates within
3185 one hour (marked in Fig. 6.1 in white and dark grey, respectively, but note that Fig. 6.1
3186 depict mating rates over 2 h). Our previous work on sociability (Scott et al., 2018) and
3187 aggression (Baxter et al., in prep) with the same DGRP hybrid genotypes indicated
3188 moderate repeatability of behavioral scores over time. We thus decided a priori that we
3189 would only score the videos from the hybrid genotypes that showed forced copulation rates
3190 consistent with their assignment into the low and high forced copulation rate categories.
3191 We considered the forced copulation rate of a genotype to be consistent if it was among the
3192 top three forced copulation rates for the ‘high’ genotypes, or among the bottom three for
3193 the ‘low’ genotypes.

3194 We reared flies of the three ‘low’ and three ‘high’ success hybrid genotypes and
3195 collected and housed males as described above. We again aspirated one 4-day-old focal
3196 male and one DGRP-83 newly eclosed, teneral female into each arena. We then
3197 immediately began video recording for one hour using Logitech HD Pro c920 webcams
3198 and iPods. Trials occurred over six test days, where we tested four males per hybrid
3199 genotype per day, resulting in a sample size of 24 males per hybrid genotype.

3200 Later, observers blind to the focal males’ hybrid genotypes observed the videos
3201 using BORIS observation software (Friard & Gamba, 2016). For each arena, an observer
3202 recorded the duration that each male pursued the female and the number of times he
3203 mounted the female as indicators of persistence and coercive actions, respectively.
3204 Observers also recorded the duration that the female spent running away from the male
3205 while he pursued her as an indication of resistance. We excluded two trials with hybrid
3206 genotype 354. In one trial, mating occurred at trial commencement, so we did not have

3207 behavioral observations. In the other trial, the male spent 43% of the trial duration on the
3208 ceiling of the arena and never interacted with the female. No other trial had a fly on the
3209 ceiling for more than 20% of the trial duration.

3210

3211 *6.5.2 Statistical Analyses*

3212 We again used the lme4 package to perform linear mixed-effects models (LMM)
3213 and generalized linear mixed-effects models (GLMM). All models included hybrid
3214 genotype and test day as random factors and forced copulation success group ('low' vs.
3215 'high') as a fixed factor. We report Wald χ^2 values generated with the Anova function from
3216 the car package version 2.1-4 (Fox and Weisberg 2011) for tests of the forced copulation
3217 success grouping (i.e. 'low' vs. 'high').

3218 We used a binomial distribution to model the occurrence of forced copulation
3219 during the 1h trials with the 'low' and 'high' success hybrid genotypes. To assess males'
3220 persistence, we log transformed the duration that each male pursued the female to increase
3221 the normality of the distributions and added 1 second of pursuit to all males to eliminate 3
3222 (out of 114) 0s. We used a LMM on the log transformed durations and included the log of
3223 trial duration as an offset (since males experience different trial durations depending on
3224 if/when they force copulated). For coercive actions, we modeled the number of mounts and
3225 mounting attempts males performed with a negative binomial distribution and included the
3226 log of the pursuit duration as an offset. Finally, to assess female resistance, we analyzed
3227 the duration that females spent running from males while they were being pursued. We log
3228 transformed both female running duration and male pursuit duration to increase the
3229 normality of the distributions and added 1 second of running to all females to eliminate 9
3230 (out of 114) 0s. We used a LMM to assess female running duration and included male
3231 pursuit duration as an offset. We verified model fits by visually inspecting plots of model
3232 residuals.

3233 As a secondary analysis, we grouped males based on whether or not they force
3234 copulated during the trial. The logic being that, if the behavioural differences between our
3235 'low' and 'high' genotypes are representative of what varies between individual males who

3236 fail or succeed to forcibly copulate, then we would see similar trends when comparing
3237 between ‘unsuccessful’ and ‘successful’ males as we see when comparing between males
3238 from ‘low’ and ‘high’ success genotypes. We used binomial logistic regressions to assess
3239 whether forced copulation success varied with the proportion of pursuit, mounting
3240 frequency, or female evasion attempts. In each model, we also included hybrid genotype
3241 and test day as random factors.

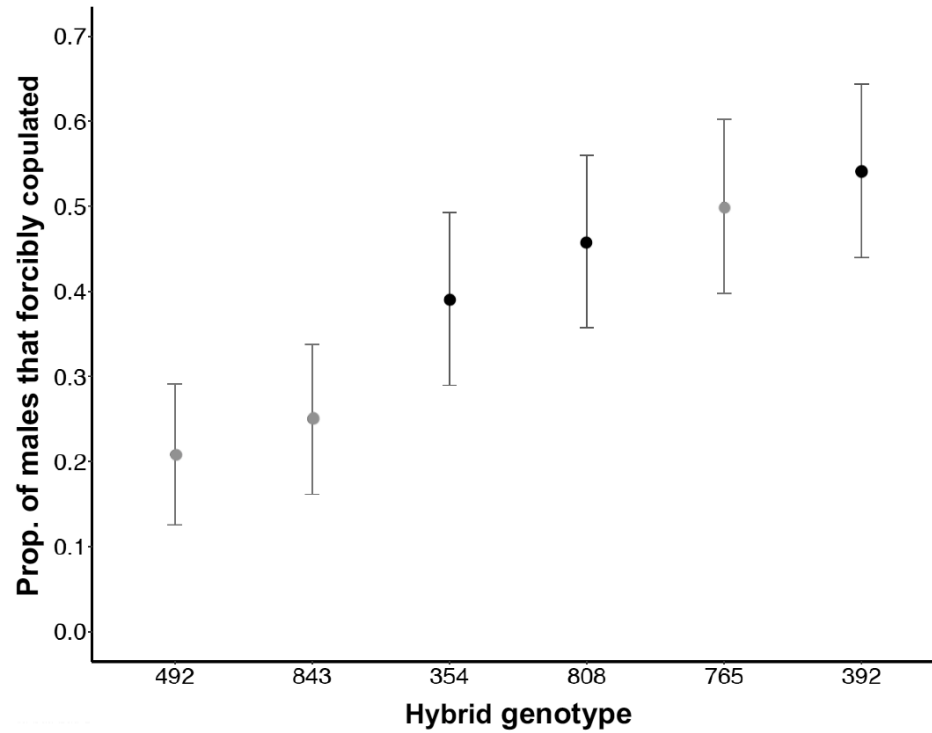
3242

3243 *6.5.3 Results*

3244 Only five of the six hybrid genotypes showed consistent forced copulation rates in
3245 the screening (Fig. 6.1) and follow-up experiments (Fig. 6.2). Following our protocol, we
3246 thus excluded hybrid genotype 765 from the video scoring. The two remaining hybrid
3247 genotypes with low forced copulation rates had half the forced mating success as the three
3248 hybrid genotypes with high forced copulation rates (GLMM, $\chi^2_1=6.58$, $p<0.05$, $N=119$, Fig
3249 6.2).

3250 Males from the ‘high’ forced copulation hybrid genotypes spent significantly more
3251 time pursuing teneral females than males from the ‘low’ hybrid genotypes (LMM, $\chi^2_1 =$
3252 5.35 , $p<0.05$, $N=118$; Fig 6.3). Males from the ‘high’ hybrid genotypes also performed
3253 significantly more mounting attempts while accounting for pursuit duration (GLMM, $\chi^2_1=$
3254 12.9 , $p<0.001$, $N=118$; Fig. 6.4). Females showed a non-significant tendency to spend more
3255 time running from ‘high’ than ‘low’ hybrid genotype males when accounting for pursuit
3256 duration (LMM, $\chi^2_1=1.68$, $p=0.20$, $N=118$; Fig 6.5).

3257 When comparing males grouped by forced copulation success, we found that both
3258 male pursuit and mounting frequency significantly predicted forced copulation success
3259 (GLMM, $z=4.4$, $p<0.001$, $N=118$ and $z=3.9$, $p<0.001$, $N=118$, respectively). However, the
3260 proportion of time a female spent attempting to evade a male did not significantly predict
3261 whether or not she would be forcibly copulated (GLMM, $z=0.50$, $p=0.62$, $N=118$).

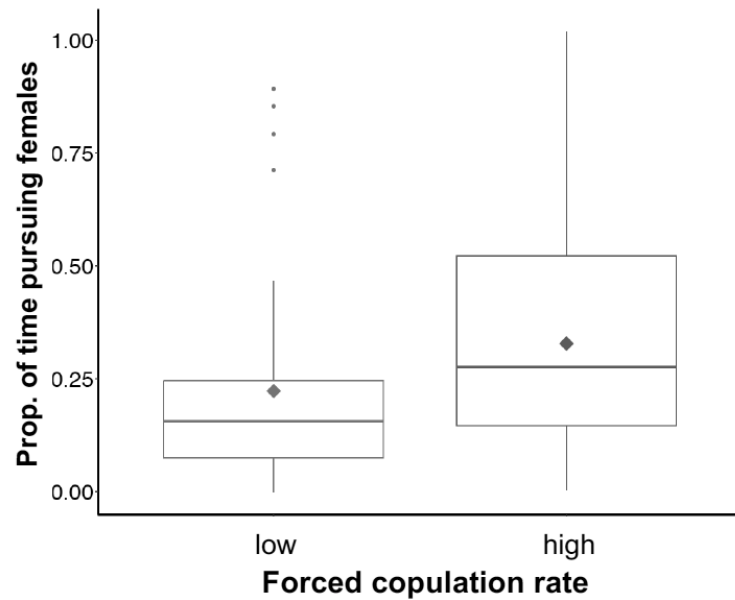


3262

3263

3264 **Figure 6.2**

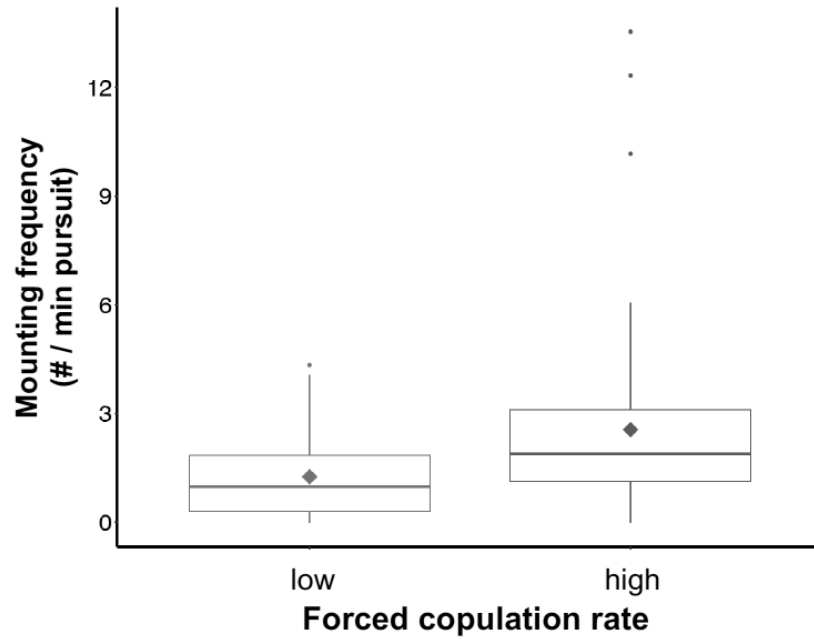
3265 Proportion \pm 1 SE of trials that resulted in forced copulation for the chosen three 'low' and
3266 three 'high' genotypes (shown in grey and black, respectively).



3267

3268 **Figure 6.3**

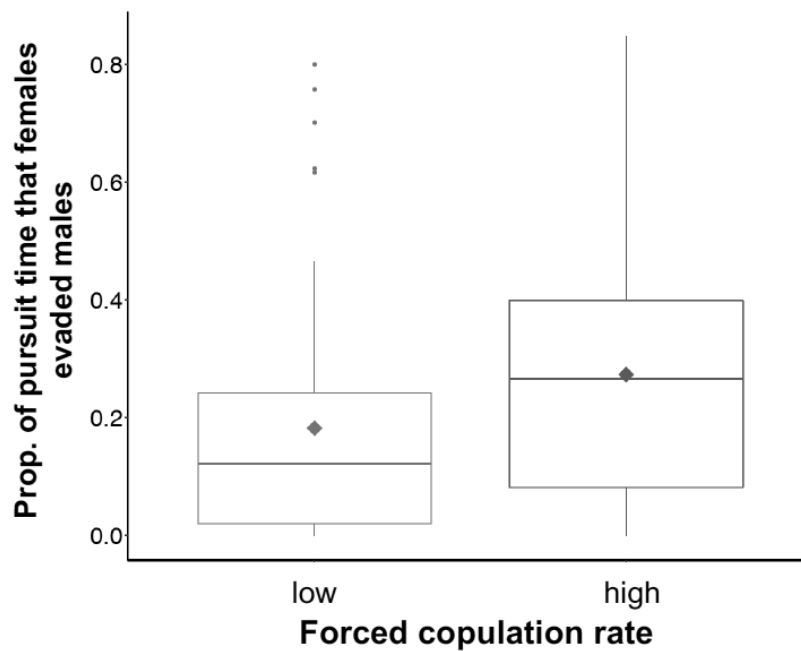
3269 Comparing males from 'low' and 'high' forced copulation success genotypes (shown in
3270 blue and red, respectively). (a) Male persistence, shown as the proportion of time that males
3271 spent pursuing teneral females during the trials. The bold horizontal lines indicate the
3272 medians, the boxes represent the interquartile range (IQR) between the first and third
3273 quartiles, and the vertical lines extend to the minimum and maximum values. Outliers are
3274 indicated by small dots, and the means are indicated by the larger diamond shapes.
3275



3276

3277 **Figure 6.4**

3278 Male coerciveness, shown as the number of times males mounted teneral females per
3279 minute of pursuit.



3280

3281 **Figure 6.5**

3282 Teneral female resistance, shown as the proportion of male pursuit that females ran away
3283 from the males.

3284 **6.6 Mating success of ‘low’ and ‘high’ hybrid genotypes with mature virgin females**

3285

3286 *6.6.1 Methods*

3287 Simultaneous with the forced copulation trials described in the previous section
3288 (Figs. 6.2–6.5) we also tested males of the same hybrid genotypes with mature virgin
3289 females. We followed the same procedure as above, except that we placed each male in an
3290 arena with a 2-day-old virgin female of DGRP-83 instead of a teneral female. We used 2-
3291 day-old virgin females because they are sexually mature but choosier than older virgin
3292 females (unpublished data). We tested 48 males per hybrid genotype.

3293 Observers who were blind to hybrid line identity scanned the mature female arenas
3294 and recorded whether or not the males mated within a one-hour trial.

3295

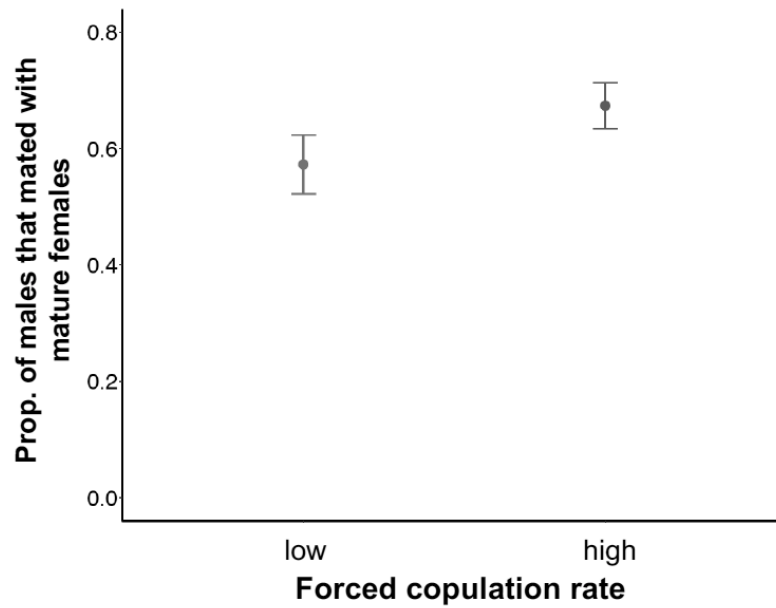
3296 *6.6.2 Statistical Analyses*

3297 We used a binomial distribution to model the occurrence of mating during the 1h
3298 trials with the ‘low’ and ‘high’ success hybrid genotypes (fixed factor). The model also
3299 included test day and hybrid genotype as random factors. We only analyzed the five hybrid
3300 genotypes included in the analyses of the previous experiment.

3301

3302 *6.6.3 Results*

3303 Males from the ‘low’ and ‘high’ forced copulation success genotypes mated at
3304 similar rates with mature females (GLMM, $\chi^2_1=2.55$, $p=0.11$, $N=240$; Fig. 6.6).



3305

3306 **Figure 6.6**

3307 Male mating success with mature females, shown as the proportion ± 1 SE of trials that
3308 resulted in matings with mature virgin females.

3309 **6.7 Discussion**

3310

3311 In our initial screen of males from 59 hybrid genotypes we found significant variation in
3312 forced copulation success across genotypes (Fig 6.1). Such genetic variation is expected,
3313 and our lab has already documented genetic variation in sociability and activity levels
3314 (Scott, Dworkin, & Dukas, 2018), mating success, latency and duration (Filice & Dukas,
3315 2019), and both male-male and female-female aggression (Baxter et al., in prep) in these
3316 same hybrid genotypes derived from DGRP lines. Many other studies using flies from the
3317 DGRP lines have also documented genetic variation in a variety of behaviours such as
3318 courtship (Gaertner et al., 2015), same-sex sexual behaviour (Hoskins, Ritchie, & Bailey,
3319 2015), male-male aggression (Edwards et al., 2009; Shorter et al., 2015), odour aversion
3320 (Swarup, Huang, Mackay, & Anholt, 2013), behavioural plasticity (Saltz, Lymer,
3321 Gabrielian, & Nuzhdin, 2017), punishment and relief memory (Appel et al., 2016) and
3322 startle response (Mackay et al., 2012). Since we used teneral females from a single
3323 genotype in our screen, we can confidently attribute the variation in forced copulation
3324 success to genetic variation across the male genotypes, implying that males with different
3325 genetic backgrounds are predisposed to distinct mating strategies.

3326 To examine the behavioural determinants of forced copulation success we chose
3327 three male genotypes with the lowest and three with the highest forced copulation rates
3328 within one hour (note that Fig 6.1 shows forced copulation rates within two-hour trials).
3329 When we re-tested these six genotypes, we found that their forced copulation rates were
3330 generally consistent with what we found in the 59 genotype assay, with the exception of
3331 one of the ‘low’ genotypes (765) which, in this replication, had the second highest forced
3332 copulation success rate (Fig 6.2). This inconsistency across experiments is likely due to
3333 gene by environment interactions that may have specifically affected hybrid genotype 765
3334 in this case. We have observed such variation in behaviour over time in our previous work
3335 with the DGRP hybrids (Scott et al., 2018; Baxter et al., in prep). Since we wanted to
3336 compare males from ‘high’ and ‘low’ success genotypes, we chose to focus on the five
3337 genotypes that were consistent over time. As we predicted, males from the ‘high’ genotypes

3338 were more persistent (Fig 6.3) and mounted more frequently (Fig 6.4) than males from the
3339 ‘low’ genotypes. When we compared ‘unsuccessful’ to ‘successful’ males, we found that
3340 male pursuit duration and mounting frequency positively predicting forced copulation
3341 success. The fact that these results are in the same direction indicates that the behavioural
3342 differences we found between the ‘high’ and ‘low’ success genotypes are representative of
3343 what varies between individual males who either succeed or fail to forcibly copulate.

3344 The results from comparing the ‘high’ and ‘low’ success genotypes support the idea
3345 that heritable behavioural differences across males contribute to their variation in forced
3346 copulation success. At the same time, we found no significant difference in how females
3347 responded to males from ‘low’ and ‘high’ genotypes with respect to running away from
3348 them during pursuit (Fig 6.5). This indicates that the variation in forced copulation success
3349 between male genotypes was not driven by variation in female resistance. This could be
3350 because males from ‘high’ success genotypes persist in their pursuit despite rejection
3351 signals from teneral females, which parallels what we have found in potentially coercive
3352 matings with recently mated females (Fig. 2 in Baxter & Dukas, 2017). Recently mated
3353 females typically reject males, and do so by extruding their ovipositor, which is a rejection
3354 signal specific to mated females (Bastock & Manning, 1955; Connolly & Cook, 1973). Due
3355 to their low receptivity, mating latencies with recently mated females are significantly
3356 longer than those with virgin females. Males who succeed in mating with recently mated
3357 females not only spend a greater cumulative amount of time pursuing them despite their
3358 clear rejection behaviour, but also spend a significantly greater proportion of time in active
3359 pursuit in the few minutes prior to mating than males who mate with virgin females (Baxter
3360 & Dukas, 2017). This suggests that male persistence, in spite of clear rejection signals,
3361 plays a role in the potentially coercive mating of recently mated females, and may also play
3362 a similar role in the forced copulation of teneral females.

3363 Finally, when we paired males with mature virgin females (who can prevent
3364 unwanted matings) we found no significant difference in mating success between males
3365 from the ‘low’ and ‘high’ genotypes (Fig 6.6). We did find that males from the ‘high’
3366 genotypes had non-significantly greater mating success with mature females, and, if this

3367 trend is indicative of a true difference, it would imply that males with high forced
3368 copulation success also have high mating success with mature virgins. However, further
3369 experiments are needed to clarify whether this is a true biological difference, and if so, what
3370 male behaviours and/or female preferences are contributing to it.

3371 For this study, we chose to focus on behavioural differences that contribute to
3372 variation in forced copulation success. Morphological variation, however, may also be a
3373 contributing factor. For example, larger males may be able to more easily forcibly copulate
3374 with smaller females. Larger male to female body size ratios increase the likelihood of
3375 mating after a pre-mating struggle in the seaweed fly (*Coelopa ursina*) (Crean & Gilburn,
3376 1998), and correlate with increased durations of forced copulations in Lake Eyre dragons
3377 (Olsson, 1995). Variation in the morphology of specific body parts could also aid male fruit
3378 flies in overcoming female resistance, like in water striders (*Gerris odontogaster*), where
3379 males with longer abdominal processes can more firmly grasp females who attempt to
3380 dislodge them, and as a result have greater mating success than males with shorter
3381 abdominal processes (Arnqvist, 1989). A potential candidate structure in fruit flies
3382 (*Drosophila melanogaster*) are the sex combs, an array of bristles on the forelegs of males,
3383 which can vary in the number and length of bristles across individuals (Ahuja, de Vito, &
3384 Singh, 2011; Snook, Gidaszewski, Chapman, & Simmons, 2013). Males that have had their
3385 sex combs removed have drastically reduced mating success compared to intact males,
3386 despite displaying persistent courtship and mounting attempts (Cook, 1977; Hurtado-
3387 Gonzales, Gallaher, Warner, & Polak, 2015; Ng & Kopp, 2008), demonstrating that that
3388 sex combs are important for mating success. While no studies have examined how variation
3389 in sex comb structure relates to forced copulation success, it is possible that the structures
3390 of either the sex combs or other physical traits affect a male's ability to overcome teneral
3391 female resistance. We will examine this possibility in our ongoing research on the
3392 mechanisms underlying forced copulation success.

3393 We consider the forced copulation of teneral female fruit flies to be an aggressive
3394 act since males inflict harm, such as wing damage, upon them and females who are forcibly
3395 copulated while teneral are more likely to experience early mortality than females who

3396 consensually mate once mature (Dukas & Jongsma, 2012a). So, given that forced
3397 copulation is an aggressive act, are males who perform forced copulations simply more
3398 aggressive in general? It is important to note that aggression is not a unitary trait, but a
3399 broad categorization of behaviours that can occur under different contexts with distinct
3400 goals (such as gaining access to mates, defending territory, protecting offspring, etc.), and
3401 that different forms of aggression may have distinct genetic, neurobiological and
3402 physiological underpinnings (Moyer, 1968). Despite this, aggressive behaviours under
3403 different contexts are sometimes positively correlated. For example, in western bluebirds
3404 (*Sialia mexicana*) males who aggressively defend their nests against heterospecifics are
3405 also more aggressive in conspecific male-male competition (Duckworth, 2006). In mice,
3406 transgenic males who lack the monoamine oxidase A (MAOA) enzyme are more
3407 aggressive towards males they are housed with, towards intruder males, and more sexually
3408 aggressive towards unreceptive females (Cases et al., 1995). Additionally, St. John and
3409 Corning (1973) found a positive correlation between male and female aggression levels
3410 across inbred mouse lines. However, Hyde and Ebert (1976) found that lines selected for
3411 increased female aggression did not show increased male aggression, and Gammie et al.
3412 (2003) did not find support for an association between male-male and maternal aggression.
3413 In fruit flies, we have found that older males are more aggressive towards other males and
3414 also have higher forced copulation rates than younger males (Baxter & Dukas, 2017), which
3415 could be taken as support for a positive correlation between male-male aggression and male
3416 sexual aggression towards females. However, in the same series of experiments, we also
3417 found that males with previous mating experience showed reduced forced copulation rates
3418 compared to mating-deprived males, while showing similar levels of aggression towards
3419 other males, indicating that prior experience can have distinct effects on sexual aggression
3420 and male-male aggression. Therefore, it is not obvious whether males who are genetically
3421 predisposed to engage in high levels of sexual aggression would also display more
3422 aggression under different contexts, making this a valuable avenue for future studies.

3423 Given the prevalence of sexual coercion and aggression in nature, we feel it is vital
3424 to gain a better understanding of the genetics, neurobiology and evolutionary biology of

3425 sexual aggression and forced copulations. However, studying aggressive sexual coercion
3426 can be complicated by many factors. First, it may not always be possible to reliably generate
3427 sexual coercion under controlled laboratory settings for certain species. Additionally,
3428 unless it is clear that the female cannot prevent an unwanted mating, it may not be possible
3429 to fully disentangle female mate screening from male sexual coercion. Finally, for many
3430 species, it is not feasible to subject females to males who may sexually coerce them. Our
3431 goal for these experiments was not only to assess genetic variation and behavioural
3432 differences contributing to forced copulation success, but to demonstrate that the forced
3433 copulation of teneral females is an excellent model for studying aggressive sexual coercion.
3434 In particular, given that fruit flies are a well-established model organism, this lesser-studied
3435 model of forced copulation with teneral females provides many opportunities for future
3436 studies to take advantage of the numerous resources and tools that exist for examining
3437 sexual conflict and its evolutionary consequences in fruit flies.

3438

3439 **6.8 Acknowledgements**

3440

3441 We thank I. Shams, J. Vu, B. Barker, S. Tao, S. Sivaratnam, and V. Vanvugt for assistance,
3442 A. Scott for advice on the statistics and comments on the manuscript, two anonymous
3443 referees for comments on the manuscript, and the Natural Sciences and Engineering
3444 Research Council of Canada, Canada Foundation for Innovation, and Ontario Innovation
3445 Trust for funding.

3446 **6.9 References**

3447

3448 Ahuja, A., de Vito, S., & Singh, R. S. (2011). Condition dependence and the nature of
3449 genetic variation for male sex comb bristle number in *Drosophila melanogaster*.
3450 *Genetica*, 139(4), 505–510. <https://doi.org/10.1007/s10709-011-9572-2>

3451 Appel, M., Scholz, C.-J., Kocabay, S., Savage, S., König, C., & Yarali, A. (2016).
3452 Independent natural genetic variation of punishment- versus relief-memory. *Biology*
3453 *Letters*, 12(12), 20160657. <https://doi.org/10.1098/rsbl.2016.0657>

3454 Arnqvist, G. (1989). Sexual selection in a water strider: the function, mechanism of
3455 selection and heritability of a male grasping apparatus. *Oikos*, 56(3), 344–350.

3456 Arnqvist, G., & Rowe, L. (2005). *Sexual conflict*. Princeton, NJ: Princeton University
3457 Press.

3458 Baniel, A., Cowlshaw, G., & Huchard, E. (2017). Male violence and sexual intimidation
3459 in a wild primate society. *Current Biology*, 27(14), 2163–2168.e3.
3460 <https://doi.org/10.1016/j.cub.2017.06.013>

3461 Bastock, M., & Manning, A. (1955). The Courtship of *Drosophila melanogaster*.
3462 *Behaviour*, 8(2), 85–111.

3463 Bates, D., Maechler, M., Bolker, B., & Walker, S. (2015). Fitting linear mixed-effects
3464 models using lme4. *Journal of Statistical Software*, 67(1), 1-48.
3465 doi:10.18637/jss.v067.i01.

3466 Baxter, C. M., & Dukas, R. (2017). Life history of aggression: effects of age and sexual
3467 experience on male aggression towards males and females. *Animal Behaviour*, 123.
3468 <https://doi.org/10.1016/j.anbehav.2016.10.022>

3469 Byrne, P. G., Rice, G. R., & Rice, W. R. (2008). Effect of a refuge from persistent male
3470 courtship in the *Drosophila* laboratory environment. *Integrative and Comparative*
3471 *Biology*, 48(2), 1–7. <https://doi.org/10.1093/icb/icn001>

3472 Cases, O., Seif, I., Grimsby, J., Gaspar, P., Chen, K., Pournin, S., ... Maeyer, E. De.
3473 (1995). Aggressive behavior and altered amounts of brain serotonin and
3474 norepinephrine in mice lacking MAOA. *Science*, 268(5218), 1763–1766.

3475 Chapman, T., Liddle, L. F., Kalb, J. M., Wolfner, M. F., & Partridge, L. (1995). Cost of
3476 mating in *Drosophila melanogaster* females is mediated by male accessory gland
3477 products. *Nature*, 373, 241–244. <https://doi.org/10.1038/373241a0>

3478 Connolly, K., & Cook, R. (1973). Rejection responses by female *Drosophila*
3479 *melanogaster*: Their ontogeny, causality and effects upon the behaviour of the
3480 courting male. *Behaviour*, 44(1), 142–166.

3481 Cook, R. M. (1977). Behavioral role of the sexcombs in *Drosophila melanogaster* and
3482 *Drosophila simulans*. *Behavior Genetics*, 7(5), 349–357.
3483 <https://doi.org/10.1007/BF01077448>

3484 Crean, C. S., & Gilburn, A. S. (1998). Sexual selection as a side-effect of sexual conflict
3485 in the seaweed fly, *Coelopa ursina* (Diptera: Coelopidae). *Animal Behaviour*, 56(6),
3486 1405–1410.

3487 Duckworth, R. A. (2006). Behavioral correlations across breeding contexts provide a
3488 mechanism for a cost of aggression. *Behavioral Ecology*, 17(6), 1011–1019.
3489 <https://doi.org/10.1093/beheco/arl035>

- 3490 Dukas, R., & Jongsma, K. (2012a). Costs to females and benefits to males from forced
3491 copulations in fruit flies. *Animal Behaviour*, *84*, 1177–1182.
- 3492 Dukas, R., & Jongsma, K. (2012b). Effects of forced copulations on female sexual
3493 attractiveness in fruit flies. *Animal Behaviour*, *84*(6), 1501–1505.
3494 <https://doi.org/10.1016/j.anbehav.2012.09.023>
- 3495 Edwards, A. C., Ayroles, J. F., Stone, E. A., Carbone, M. A., Lyman, R. F., & Mackay, T.
3496 F. C. (2009). A transcriptional network associated with natural variation in
3497 *Drosophila* aggressive behavior. *Genome Biology*, *10*(7), R76.
3498 <https://doi.org/10.1186/gb-2009-10-7-r76>
- 3499 Feldblum, J. T., Wroblewski, E. E., Rudicell, R. S., Hahn, B. H., Paiva, T., Cetinkaya-
3500 Rundel, M., ... Gilby, I. C. (2014). Sexually coercive male chimpanzees sire more
3501 offspring. *Current Biology*, *24*(23), 2855–2860.
3502 <https://doi.org/10.1016/j.cub.2014.10.039>
- 3503 Filice, D. C. S., & Dukas, R. (2019). Winners have higher pre-copulatory mating success
3504 but losers have better post-copulatory outcomes. *Proceedings. Biological Sciences*,
3505 *286*(1900), 20182838. <https://doi.org/10.1098/rspb.2018.2838>
- 3506 Filice, D. C. S., & Long, T. A. F. (2016). Genetic variation in male-induced harm in
3507 *Drosophila melanogaster*. *Biology Letters*, *12*(4), 20160105.
3508 <https://doi.org/10.1098/rsbl.2016.0105>
- 3509 Fox, J., & Weisberg, S. (2011). An {R} companion to applied regression, second edition.
3510 Thousand Oaks CA: Sage. URL:
3511 <http://socserv.socsci.mcmaster.ca/jfox/Books/Companion>
- 3512 Friard, O., & Gamba, M. (2016). BORIS: a free, versatile open-source event-logging
3513 software for video/audio coding and live observations. *Methods in Ecology and*
3514 *Evolution*, *7*(11), 1325–1330. <https://doi.org/10.1111/2041-210X.12584>
- 3515 Gaertner, B. E., Ruedi, E. a, McCoy, L. J., Moore, J. M., Wolfner, M. F., & Mackay, T. F.
3516 C. (2015). Heritable variation in courtship patterns in *Drosophila melanogaster*. *G3*
3517 (*Bethesda, Md.*), *5*(4), 531–9. <https://doi.org/10.1534/g3.114.014811>
- 3518 Gammie, S. C., Hasen, N. S., Rhodes, J. S., Girard, I., & Garland, T. (2003). Predatory
3519 aggression, but not maternal or intermale aggression, is associated with high
3520 voluntary wheel-running behavior in mice. *Hormones and Behavior*, *44*(3), 209–
3521 221. [https://doi.org/10.1016/S0018-506X\(03\)00140-5](https://doi.org/10.1016/S0018-506X(03)00140-5)
- 3522 Halekoh, U., & Højsgaard, S. (2014). A Kenward-Roger approximation and parametric
3523 bootstrap methods for tests in linear mixed models – The R package pbkrtest.
3524 *Journal of Statistical Software*, *59*(9), 1-30. URL <http://www.jstatsoft.org/v59/i09/>.
- 3525 Han, C. S., & Jablonski, P. G. (2009). Female genitalia concealment promotes intimate
3526 male courtship in a water strider. *PLoS ONE*, *4*(6).
3527 <https://doi.org/10.1371/journal.pone.0005793>
- 3528 Han, C. S., & Jablonski, P. G. (2010). Male water striders attract predators to intimidate
3529 females into copulation. *Nature Communications*, *1*(5), 1–6.
3530 <https://doi.org/10.1038/ncomms1051>
- 3531 Hoskins, J. L., Ritchie, M. G., & Bailey, N. W. (2015). A test of genetic models for the
3532 evolutionary maintenance of same-sex sexual behaviour. *Proceedings of the Royal*
3533 *Society B: Biological Sciences*, *282*(1809). <https://doi.org/10.1098/rspb.2015.0429>

- 3534 Hurtado-Gonzales, J. L., Gallaher, W., Warner, A., & Polak, M. (2015). Microscale laser
3535 surgery demonstrates the grasping function of the male sex combs in *Drosophila*
3536 *melanogaster* and *Drosophila bipectinata*. *Ethology*, *121*(1), 45–56.
3537 <https://doi.org/10.1111/eth.12316>
- 3538 Hyde, J. S., & Ebert, P. D. (1976). Correlated response in selection for aggressiveness in
3539 female mice. I. Male aggressiveness. *Behavior Genetics*, *6*(4), 421–427. Retrieved
3540 from <http://www.ncbi.nlm.nih.gov/pubmed/988820>
- 3541 Johns, J. L. (2007). *Coercive male mating behaviour in the Brush-Legged Wolf Spider*
3542 *Schizocosa ocreata* (Hentz). (Unpublished master's thesis) University of Cincinnati,
3543 Ohio, USA.
- 3544 Johns, J. L., Roberts, J. A., Clark, D. L., & Uetz, G. W. (2009). Love bites: Male fang use
3545 during coercive mating in wolf spiders. *Behavioral Ecology and Sociobiology*, *64*(1),
3546 13–18. <https://doi.org/10.1007/s00265-009-0812-8>
- 3547 Laturney, M., & Billeter, J. C. (2016). *Drosophila melanogaster* females restore their
3548 attractiveness after mating by removing male anti-aphrodisiac pheromones. *Nature*
3549 *Communications*, *7*, 1–11. <https://doi.org/10.1038/ncomms12322>
- 3550 Mackay, T. F. C., Richards, S., Stone, E. A., Barbadilla, A., Ayroles, J. F., Zhu, D., ...
3551 Gibbs, R. A. (2012). The *Drosophila melanogaster* Genetic Reference Panel.
3552 *Nature*, *482*(7384), 173–8. <https://doi.org/10.1038/nature10811>
- 3553 Markow, T. A. (2000). Forced matings in natural populations of *Drosophila*. *The*
3554 *American Naturalist*, *156*(1), 100–103.
3555 <https://doi.org/10.1258/00236770781036508>
- 3556 Mckinney, F., Derrickson, S. R., & Mineau, P. (1983). Forced copulation in waterfowl,
3557 250–293.
- 3558 McKinney, F., & Evarts, S. (1997). Sexual coercion in waterfowl and other birds. In
3559 *Ornithological Monographs* (pp. 163–195).
- 3560 McLean, C. A., Chan, R., Dickerson, A. L., Moussalli, A., & Stuart-Fox, D. (2016).
3561 Social interactions generate mutually reinforcing selection for male aggression in
3562 Lake Eyre dragons. *Behavioral Ecology*, *27*(4), 1149–1157.
3563 <https://doi.org/10.1093/beheco/arw028>
- 3564 Moyer, K. E. (1968). Kinds of aggression and their physiological basis. *Communications*
3565 *in Behavioral Biology*, *2*, 65–87.
- 3566 Ng, C. S., & Kopp, A. (2008). Sex combs are important for male mating success in
3567 *Drosophila melanogaster*. *Behavior Genetics*, *38*(2), 195–201.
3568 <https://doi.org/10.1007/s10519-008-9190-7>
- 3569 Olsson, M. (1995). Forced copulation and costly female resistance behavior in the Lake
3570 Eyre Dragon, *Ctenophorus maculosus*. *Herpetologica*, *51*(1), 19–24.
- 3571 Parker G. A. (1979). Sexual selection and sexual conflict. In: Blum MS, Blum NA, eds
3572 (1979) *Sexual selection and Reproductive Competition in Insects*. New York:
3573 Academic Press. pp 123–166
- 3574 R-Core-Team (2016) R: A language and environment for statistical computing. R
3575 foundation for Statistical Computing, Vienna, Austria. URL
3576 <http://www.R-project.org/>.
- 3577 Rice, W. R., Stewart, A. D., Morrow, E. H., Linder, J. E., Orteiza, N., & Byrne, P. G.

- 3578 (2006). Assessing sexual conflict in the *Drosophila melanogaster* laboratory model
3579 system. *Philosophical Transactions of the Royal Society B: Biological Sciences*,
3580 361(1466), 287–299. <https://doi.org/10.1098/rstb.2005.1787>
- 3581 Rodd, F. H., Hughes, K. A., Grether, G. F., & Baril, C. T. (2002). A possible non-sexual
3582 origin of mate preference: Are male guppies mimicking fruit? *Proceedings of the*
3583 *Royal Society B: Biological Sciences*, 269(1490), 475–481.
3584 <https://doi.org/10.1098/rspb.2001.1891>
- 3585 Rowe, L., Arnqvist, G., Sih, A., & Krupa, J. (1994). Sexual conflict and the evolutionary
3586 ecology of mating patterns: water striders as a model system. *Trends in Ecology &*
3587 *Evolution*, 9(8), 289–293. [https://doi.org/10.1016/0169-5347\(94\)90032-9](https://doi.org/10.1016/0169-5347(94)90032-9)
- 3588 Saltz, J. B., Lymer, S., Gabrielian, J., & Nuzhdin, S. V. (2017). Genetic Correlations
3589 among Developmental and Contextual Behavioral Plasticity in *Drosophila*
3590 *melanogaster*. *The American Naturalist*, 190(1), 61–72.
3591 <https://doi.org/10.1086/692010>
- 3592 Scott, A. M., Dworkin, I., & Dukas, R. (2018). Sociability in Fruit Flies: Genetic
3593 Variation, Heritability and Plasticity. *Behavior Genetics*, 48(3), 247–258.
3594 <https://doi.org/10.1007/s10519-018-9901-7>
- 3595 Seeley, C., & Dukas, R. (2011). Teneral matings in fruit flies: Male coercion and female
3596 response. *Animal Behaviour*, 81(3), 595–601.
3597 <https://doi.org/10.1016/j.anbehav.2010.12.003>
- 3598 Shorter, J., Couch, C., Huang, W., Carbone, M. A., Peiffer, J., Anholt, R. R. H., &
3599 Mackay, T. F. C. (2015). Genetic architecture of natural variation in *Drosophila*
3600 *melanogaster* aggressive behavior. *Proceedings of the National Academy of*
3601 *Sciences*, 112(27), E3555–E3563. <https://doi.org/10.1073/pnas.1510104112>
- 3602 Snook, R. R., Gidaszewski, N. A., Chapman, T., & Simmons, L. W. (2013). Sexual
3603 selection and the evolution of secondary sexual traits: Sex comb evolution in
3604 *Drosophila*. *Journal of Evolutionary Biology*, 26(4), 912–918.
3605 <https://doi.org/10.1111/jeb.12105>
- 3606 St. John, R. D., & Corning, P. A. (1973). Maternal aggression in mice. *Behavioral*
3607 *Biology*, 9, 635–639. [https://doi.org/10.1016/S0091-6773\(73\)80058-6](https://doi.org/10.1016/S0091-6773(73)80058-6)
- 3608 Swarup, S., Huang, W., Mackay, T. F. C., & Anholt, R. R. H. (2013). Analysis of natural
3609 variation reveals neurogenetic networks for *Drosophila* olfactory behavior.
3610 *Proceedings of the National Academy of Sciences*, 110(3), 1017–1022.
3611 <https://doi.org/10.1073/pnas.1220168110>
- 3612 Thornhill, R. (1980). Rape in *Panorpa* scorpionflies and a general rape hypothesis. *Animal*
3613 *Behaviour*, 28(1), 52–59. [https://doi.org/10.1016/S0003-3472\(80\)80007-8](https://doi.org/10.1016/S0003-3472(80)80007-8)
- 3614 Wigby, S., & Chapman, T. (2004). Female Resistance to Male Harm Evolves in Response
3615 to Manipulation of Sexual Conflict. *Evolution*, 58(5), 1028–1037.
- 3616 Zwarts, L., Vanden Broeck, L., Cappuyns, E., Ayroles, J. F., Magwire, M. M., Vulsteke,
3617 V., ... Callaerts, P. (2015). The genetic basis of natural variation in mushroom body
3618 size in *Drosophila melanogaster*. *Nature Communications*, 6, 10115. Retrieved from
3619 <http://dx.doi.org/10.1038/ncomms10115>
3620

3621

CHAPTER 7 – DISCUSSION

3622

3623 7.1 Overview

3624

3625 This thesis has examined the roles of male persistence and aggression in a variety of
3626 conspecific interactions in fruit flies. We began by examining how males of distinct ages
3627 varied in their persistence in courting unreceptive, recently mated females, finding that
3628 older males were more persistent than younger males. (Chapter 2). Then we moved on to
3629 test for male persistence in courting a female in the presence of a competitor male, and
3630 quantified direct male-male courtship interference, which is a novel finding for *Drosophila*
3631 *melanogaster* where it is often assumed that males engage in scramble competition for
3632 mates (Spieth, 1974) (Chapter 3). We then placed males in ‘mate guarding’ circumstances
3633 by adding an intruder male to an arena with a recently mated male with either his mate or
3634 a foreign mated female. We observed increased aggression by males in the presence of their
3635 recent mate and quantified how being present to guard one’s mate can increase paternity
3636 success (Chapter 4). Next we examined how male aggression towards other males as well
3637 as towards females would be affected by male age and previous mating experience (Chapter
3638 5). We found that male age was positively correlated with male aggression towards other
3639 males and sexual aggression towards females, and that previous mating experience was
3640 associated with reduced male sexual aggression but did not appear to affect male-male
3641 aggression. Finally, we found that males who were more persistent and aggressive in their
3642 pursuit of teneral females were more likely to succeed in forcibly copulating with them
3643 (Chapter 6).

3644

3645 7.2 The role of persistence

3646

3647 In the introduction I broadly defined persistence as the continuation in a course of action in
3648 spite of difficulty or resistance. From this definition, we can divide persistence into two
3649 broad categories: (i) persistence in performing a task in spite of external difficulties, and

3650 (ii) persistence in performing a task in spite of difficulty or resistance from the ‘object’ of
3651 the task. For the first category of persistence, the external difficulties could be interruptions
3652 or interference by conspecifics while trying to complete a task. For example, foraging bats
3653 (*Tadarida brasiliensis*) will emit ultrasonic signals to interfere with the echolocation of
3654 conspecifics, making it more difficult for them to catch prey (Corcoran & Conner, 2014),
3655 while male satin bowerbirds (*Ptilonorhynchus violaceus*) will steal decorative feathers
3656 from one another’s bowers during bower-building (Borgia & Gore, 1986). For the second
3657 category of persistence, difficulty from the ‘object’ of the task could be, for example,
3658 difficulty in consuming certain seeds because of a hard shell, as seen in bullfinches (Greig-
3659 Smith, 1987) or grey squirrels (*Sciurus carolinensis*, Jacobs, 1992), or difficulty in
3660 achieving copulation because the potential mate is resisting (Arnqvist, 1992; Kumano,
3661 Kuriwada, Shiromoto, Haraguchi, & Kohama, 2011).

3662 In our earliest experiments, our primary goal was to compare male mate choosiness
3663 between younger and older males (Chapter 2). However, in one of our experiments, we
3664 compared the courtship durations of younger and older males when they were placed
3665 together with a female in a vial. We found that older males spent a significantly longer
3666 duration courting than did younger males under this competitive condition, while both
3667 younger and older males spent the same amount of time courting when placed individually
3668 with females (Fig. 2.6). This result implied that older males were more persistent in
3669 courtship in the face of difficulty from a competitor than were younger males (i.e. category
3670 (i) persistence). At that point in time, we were not yet aware of what the males were doing
3671 that was affecting the courtship of their competitor. When we followed-up on this
3672 experiment in Chapter 3, we replicated the result of older males being more persistent in
3673 courting a female in spite of the presence of a competitor male and found that the males
3674 were directly interfering with one another’s courtship via courtship takeovers (Fig. 3.7). In
3675 addition to comparing younger versus older males, we compared smaller versus larger
3676 males competing for access to a single female. Paralleling our results with older versus
3677 younger males, we found that larger males interfered more with the courtship of smaller
3678 males (Fig. 3.3). Interestingly, however, we found that small males persisted in spite of this

3679 interference by larger males and spent just as much time courting the female when
3680 competing against a larger male as they did when they were alone with the female (Fig 3.4).
3681 This highlights the interesting and potentially complex interactions that can occur between
3682 males' subtly aggressive courtship interference and their persistence in courting in spite of
3683 interference by their competitor. Older and larger males interfere more than younger and
3684 smaller males. However, this interference does not deter persistence by small males, while
3685 it does appear to reduce courtship by younger males. Therefore, it is not obvious how a
3686 male's courtship will be affected by the presence of a competitor male. This is particularly
3687 important when studying female mate choice in fruit flies, which are often used as models
3688 for sexual selection research (e.g. Filice & Long, 2017; Friberg & Arnqvist, 2003;
3689 Qvarnström & Forsgren, 1998). To infer a female's preference between males that vary in
3690 some way, researchers will sometimes place a female with males from two distinct
3691 categories and observe which male she mates with (e.g. male age (Long, Markow, &
3692 Yaeger, 1980; Somashekar & Krishna, 2011), and previous male mating experience
3693 (Markow, Quaid, & Kerr, 1978)). However, our findings demonstrate the results of such
3694 tests may not be determined exclusively by the female's preferences but may also be
3695 affected by the ability of males to interrupt each other's courtship, and by how persistent
3696 each male is in spite of difficulty caused by the interference from his competitor. Therefore,
3697 due to the complex interplay between female preference, male competitive ability and male
3698 persistence, the results from such female choice assays must be interpreted cautiously.

3699 With respect to category (ii) persistence, we documented a number of instances in
3700 which males were persistent in courting and pursuing females in spite of resistance by those
3701 females. Again, in our earliest experiments designed to explore male mate choosiness, we
3702 found that older males were more persistent in courting recently mated females than were
3703 younger males, while both male ages courted virgin females vigorously (Fig. 2.1). Note
3704 that recently mated females are relatively unreceptive and perform a variety of well-
3705 documented rejection behaviours when being pursued by males (Bastock & Manning,
3706 1955; Connolly & Cook, 1973; Dukas & Scott, 2015). At the time, we interpreted these
3707 results as indicating that older males (4-day-olds) were less choosy in their courtship than

3708 were younger males (1-day-olds). However, we can also interpret the same results as
3709 indicating that older males are more persistent in pursuing unreceptive females than are
3710 younger males. In Chapter 5, we specifically tested the courtship persistence of 4-day-old
3711 males by placing them with mature virgin or mature recently mated females and observing
3712 for courtship and mating. We found that matings with recently mated females occurred
3713 after significantly longer trial durations than matings with virgin females (Fig. 5.7), and
3714 that males in the mated female treatment spent significantly more time courting, especially
3715 in the few minutes prior to mating, than did males in the virgin female treatment (Fig. 5.7).
3716 This demonstrates that mating with recently mated females typically requires higher
3717 courtship persistence from males than does mating with virgin females. When comparing
3718 mating success with recently mated females across male ages, we found that older males
3719 had higher mating success than younger males, in spite of long mating latencies (Fig. 5.4).
3720 We also found that males that had been previously deprived of female contact and mating
3721 also had higher mating success with recently mated females compared to males who had
3722 prior mating experience (Fig. 5.12). Again, these matings had long latencies, implying that
3723 the mating-deprived males may have been more persistent in their pursuit of recently mated
3724 females than were males with previous mating experience.

3725 Another example of males pursuing resistant females is when males pursue recently
3726 eclosed, teneral females. Teneral female flies resist mating by running from males and
3727 kicking them during courtship, and by walking and kicking during mating if it occurs
3728 (Seeley & Dukas, 2011). In Chapter 5, paralleling our results with recently mated females,
3729 we found that older males, and mating-deprived males had higher mating success with
3730 teneral females than did younger and mating-experienced males. These matings also had
3731 long latencies, which, combined with our knowledge of the intense resistance by teneral
3732 females, implies that older and mating-deprived males are more persistent in their pursuit
3733 of teneral females despite resistance. We further supported this conclusion by comparing
3734 males of different genotypes that differed in their forced copulation success with teneral
3735 females (Chapter 6). When we compared males from genotypes that had relatively high
3736 forced copulation success to those with relatively low forced copulation success, we found

3737 that males from the ‘high’ genotypes were more persistent in their pursuit of teneral females
3738 than males from ‘low’ genotypes.

3739 Overall, the results in this thesis have demonstrated that male fruit flies are able to
3740 utilize persistent behavioural patterns under a variety of circumstances. Males can persist
3741 in their courtship attempts in spite of interference by competitors, and they can also persist
3742 in pursuing females who attempt to resist or flee from their mating attempts. However, our
3743 results also demonstrate that this persistence is consistently variable across males, based on
3744 their age, size, prior experience, and genotype. Therefore, male persistence behaviours
3745 merit research under a variety of contexts in order to fully understand when, why, and how
3746 males will persist, and to uncover how these distinct persistent behavioural patterns can
3747 affect their fitness.

3748

3749 **7.3 The role of aggression**

3750

3751 Many studies of aggression tend to focus on interactions between males, likely because
3752 males are often the more aggressive sex in many species (e.g. humans (Frisell, Pawitan,
3753 Långström, & Lichtenstein, 2012; Niv, Tuvblad, Raine, & Baker, 2013; Tuvblad, Grann,
3754 & Lichtenstein, 2006), Lake Eyre dragons (Olsson, 1995), deer (family: Cervidae, Clutton-
3755 Brock, 1982) and dragonflies (family: Libellulidae, Alcock, 1987; Marden & Cobb, 2004)).
3756 This is certainly the case in fruit flies, where the majority of research focuses on male-male
3757 aggression (e.g. Chen, Lee, Bowens, Huber, & Kravitz, 2002; Davis, Thomas, Liu,
3758 Campbell, & Dierick, 2018; Hoffmann, 1987; Saltz, 2013; Shorter et al., 2015; Wang &
3759 Sokolowski, 2017, but see Bath et al., 2017; Nilsen, Chan, Huber, & Kravitz, 2004; Ueda
3760 & Kidokoro, 2002 for exceptions). In my work, I have also mainly focused on aggression
3761 performed by males. However, rather than focusing solely on male-male aggression, I have
3762 expanded the scope of my studies to include male sexual aggression towards females,
3763 which is not often studied explicitly with fruit flies. I will discuss my findings on both male-
3764 male and male-female sexual aggression in turn below.

3765 Our first foray into studying explicitly aggressive interactions was prompted by an
3766 interesting finding by Yuan et al., (2014) who were studying the effects of experience with
3767 females on male-male aggression from a neurological perspective. One of their secondary
3768 findings was that males who had just mated with virgin females became significantly more
3769 aggressive after mating, and they suggested that this could possibly be a guarding
3770 behaviour. Based on their finding we decided to explicitly test for male-male aggression
3771 under a mate-guarding context (Chapter 4). First, we compared the aggression of a pair of
3772 mated males in the presence of their recent mates to the aggression of a pair of males who
3773 had not mated but were in the presence of recently mated females. We found that the
3774 recently mated males were more aggressive than the virgin males (Fig. 4.2). Next we
3775 compared the aggression performed by a guard male in the presence of his recent mate to
3776 the aggression displayed by an intruder. We found that guard males were significantly more
3777 aggressive than intruders (Fig. 4.5) and that the presence of a guard male reduced the
3778 likelihood that his recent mate would remate with the intruder male (Figs. 4.9 and 4.10).
3779 This exciting finding about an undocumented potential function of male-male aggression
3780 in fruit flies inspired us to look for other instances of male aggression in flies that may have
3781 been previously overlooked.

3782 Conflict between males and females over reproduction is highly prevalent across
3783 species (Arnqvist & Rowe, 2005). When pre-mating sexual conflict involves the potential
3784 of one sex physically coercing and potentially harming the other sex, it is also reasonable
3785 to describe such behaviours as aggressive. It was through this perspective that we quantified
3786 male sexual aggression towards both recently mated females (Chapter 5) and teneral
3787 females (Chapters 5 and 6)

3788 The remating of recently mated female fruit flies has been well-described as a form
3789 of sexual conflict between males and females (e.g. Byrne, Rice, & Rice, 2008; Wigby &
3790 Chapman, 2004). However, to my knowledge, we were the first to quantify female fruit fly
3791 resistance behaviours during remating, demonstrating that such matings are sometimes
3792 coercive. We found that, when compared to mating with previously virgin females, females
3793 who were previously mated spent more time kicking males during mating and were also

3794 more likely to keep their wings closed (Fig. 5.8). These resistance behaviours performed
3795 by recently mated females during remating parallel those performed by teneral females
3796 during forced copulations, specifically with respect to females kicking during mating
3797 (Seeley & Dukas, 2011). In this series of experiments, we found that older and mating-
3798 deprived males had higher potentially coercive mating success with recently mated
3799 females, and higher forced copulation success with teneral females than did younger or
3800 mating-experienced males, respectively (Figs. 5.3, 5.4, 5.11 and 5.12). Therefore, a male's
3801 propensity to sexually coerce recently mated females or to forcibly mate with teneral
3802 females may be affected by similar factors.

3803 In Chapter 6 we chose to focus exclusively on forced copulation, rather than
3804 remating, as it is a more definitive case of male sexual aggression towards females. When
3805 comparing males from 'high' and 'low' forced copulation success genotypes we found that
3806 males from the 'high' success genotypes performed more mounting attempts per minute of
3807 pursuit than males from the 'low' success genotypes (Fig. 6.4). Females who are force
3808 copulated while teneral sustain significant wing damage from copulation (Dukas &
3809 Jongsma, 2012). However, even females who are only pursued by males while teneral, and
3810 not force copulated, receive significantly more wing damage than those who are not.
3811 Therefore, even males from the 'high' forced copulation success genotypes who did not
3812 force copulate during the trial may have caused more harm to females through their higher
3813 mounting attempts and pursuit durations than males from the 'low' success genotypes.

3814 Throughout my graduate studies, it has been my goal to study aggressive behaviour
3815 using a variety of different approaches. Through these different approaches we have
3816 demonstrated that male fruit flies use aggression towards other males, either subtly as in
3817 the case of courtship interference, or more overtly as seen in aggression under mate
3818 guarding contexts. We have also examined sexual conflict over mating rate in flies by
3819 categorizing such interactions as male sexual aggression towards both teneral and recently
3820 mated females. Our results demonstrate that there are many ways in which males can use
3821 different aggressive behavioural patterns to achieve goals, often related to their mating
3822 success. However, as with persistence, we have also shown that the ways in which males

3823 utilize aggressive behaviours are variable, and can be affected by their age, size, genetic
3824 background and both their long-term and immediate prior mating experiences.

3825

3826 **7.4 Future directions**

3827

3828 Overall, the work included in this thesis covers a wide range of topics and is exploratory in
3829 nature. Due to its breadth, it opens many avenues for future research on many of the topics
3830 it touches upon. In this section I will focus on a three key areas for future work.

3831 One of the main focuses of this thesis has been on male aggressive behaviours
3832 towards both males and females. Although we have studied a wide breadth of instances in
3833 which males can be aggressive, by including both male-male and male-female aggression,
3834 we have still mostly overlooked the aggression performed by females.

3835 Aggressive behaviours are important for securing resources for both males and
3836 females in many species. For example, in Texas cichlids (*Herichthys cyanoguttatum*) both
3837 males and females will fight with conspecifics over access to spawning sites (Draud,
3838 Macías-Ordóñez, Verga, & Itzkowitz, 2004) and in beaugregory damselfish (*Stegastes*
3839 *leucostictus*) both males and females chase intruders away from their territories (Horne &
3840 Itzkowitz, 1995). Female fruit flies also perform aggressive behaviours, though few studies
3841 have examined it directly. Studies that have focused on female-female aggression have
3842 shown that females utilize distinct behavioural patterns and aggressive actions compared
3843 to males (Nilsen et al., 2004), their aggression levels are influenced by prior social
3844 experience (Ueda & Kidokoro, 2002), and that male sperm and sex peptide transferred
3845 during mating increases female-female aggression levels (Bath et al., 2017). However, how
3846 is female aggression affected, for example, by female age? In Chapter 5 we demonstrated
3847 that older males are more aggressive than younger males in male-male aggression; do
3848 females show the same pattern with age? One could predict a positive association between
3849 age and aggression in females following the same logic for this prediction in males, namely
3850 that older individuals have lower reproductive value owing to their lower potential for
3851 future reproductive success, and therefore they may be more willing to sustain damage from

3852 fighting (Kemp, 2006; Parker, 1974). Additionally, female aggression can depend on
3853 previous experience. If, for example, a female encounters a high-quality food source for
3854 the first time at an older age it may indicate to her that such high-quality food is rare, and
3855 therefore she would be more motivated to fight over access to it than a younger female
3856 encountering the same high-quality food for the first time. Future work on female-female
3857 aggression in fruit flies could attempt to answer these questions.

3858 Aside from understanding whether male and female aggression levels are similarly
3859 affected by age, environment or previous experiences, we can also ask whether they are
3860 genetically correlated. In other words, does variation in male-male and female-female
3861 aggression levels have shared or distinct genetic underpinnings? Fruit flies are an excellent
3862 model for examining such genetic correlations because of our ability to maintain a large
3863 number of distinct genetic lines, thereby allowing us to test multiple individuals per
3864 genotype. Shorter et al., (2015) performed aggression assays with males from the
3865 *Drosophila* Genetic Reference Panel (DGRP) (Mackay et al., 2012) and found significant
3866 genetic variation in male-male aggression. In Chapter 6 we demonstrated significant
3867 genetic variation in male-female sexual aggression using hybrid flies generated from the
3868 DGRP. However, I am aware of no previous research on genetic variation in female-female
3869 aggression in fruit flies or studies that test for a genetic correlation between males and
3870 females. Therefore, as part of my graduate studies (not included in this thesis), we tested
3871 for both male-male and female-female aggression in hybrid offspring generated from the
3872 DGRP. We tested males and females from 24 hybrid genotypes simultaneously, and video
3873 recorded trials to allow for detailed observations of their behaviours. We hope that our
3874 results will help us understand the relationship between genetic variation in male-male and
3875 female-female aggression.

3876 A second area that calls for future research is courtship interference and persistence
3877 in the face of a competitor. The results from Chapter 3 demonstrate that males vary in their
3878 persistence in the face of a competitor and that they vary in the frequency with which they
3879 interfere with their competitor's courtship. However, perhaps more interestingly, the results
3880 demonstrate that this persistence and interference are not necessarily positively associated,

3881 meaning that a male who interferes less is not necessarily one who will be less persistent.
3882 For example, in Chapter 3 we saw that small males interfered less than large males, but
3883 courted females in the presence of a competitor just as much as if they were placed alone
3884 with the female, demonstrating high persistence (Figs. 3.3 and 3.4). Therefore, this single
3885 study has introduced us to the complexities of male-male interactions during competitive
3886 courtship, but it certainly has not answered all of the questions.

3887 Protocols where one female is placed with two males, and the identity of her mating
3888 partner is recorded, have been used to assess female mate preferences in fruit flies, leading
3889 authors to conclude that females prefer older males over younger ones (Long et al., 1980;
3890 Somashekar & Krishna, 2011) and that they prefer virgin males over recently mated ones
3891 (Markow et al., 1978). However, in order to gain a better understanding of the competitive
3892 courtship dynamics between, for example, virgin versus recently mated males, we need to
3893 compare the males' persistence in the face of a competitor as well as their frequency of
3894 interference. And even then, the resulting 'choice' in the test will still rely on a combination
3895 of female preference, male persistence and male interference, and none of these
3896 contributions should be ignored when making conclusions based on the result of the test.
3897 Further, rather than simply comparing males of two distinct groups (e.g. small vs. large), it
3898 would be beneficial for future studies to also observe equally matched males in a
3899 competitive courtship situation. The sequential assessment model from contest theory
3900 predicts that the relative strength or resource holding potential (RHP) of each individual
3901 affects the duration and intensity of the contest, with more equally matched individuals
3902 having longer and more intense fights than when RHP is highly skewed across the
3903 opponents (Enquist & Leimar, 1983; Leimar, Austad, & Enquist, 1991). Similar patterns
3904 could arise in the case of courtship interference and persistence. For example, equally
3905 matched males may interrupt one another more frequently or persist for longer durations
3906 than pairs with a high skew in ability. Therefore, our understanding of male-male courtship
3907 interference in flies is at its beginning, with many possible avenues for future work.

3908 The final, and perhaps most apparent, area for future research is in males'
3909 persistence and sexual aggression towards females. The final data chapter of this thesis

3910 (Chapter 6) is primarily a starting point for work on male sexual aggression via the forced
3911 copulation of teneral females. Given that it was a starting point for examining behavioural
3912 differences between males with high and low forced copulation success rates, there are
3913 many other relationships we could look for. For example, in Chapter 5 we saw that older
3914 males, and mating-deprived males had both higher forced copulation rates with teneral
3915 females, and higher potentially coercive mating rates with recently mated females. Does
3916 this pattern (of higher forced copulation and higher remating) hold true in comparisons
3917 other than age and previous mating experience? For example, will males who are
3918 genetically predisposed towards higher forced copulation success also have higher rates of
3919 coercive remating? Are males who are highly sexually aggressive also better able to
3920 aggressively defend food resources from other males? Are these males more persistent in
3921 their pursuit of mature females, or persistent in courtship in the face of a competitor? Is a
3922 male's tendency or ability to perform forced copulations related to his attractiveness to
3923 mature females? Given all of these unanswered questions, following the experiments
3924 included in Chapter 6 we decided to artificially select for high and low forced copulation
3925 success lineages. We used wild-caught starting populations collected by Andrew Scott and
3926 modified a protocol he created for artificial selection on sociability. Using those starting
3927 populations we have selected on three lineages for high forced copulation success, three
3928 lineages for low forced copulation success, and also included three control lineages. These
3929 lineages are now significantly diverged and can be used to compare a variety of
3930 behavioural, physical and genetic determinants of forced copulation success.

3931

3932 **7.5 Conclusion**

3933

3934 Fruit flies are a very common model organism and have been used extensively for studies
3935 on aggressive behaviour. However, many studies focus on a single context where males
3936 use aggression, while we know that males can use aggressive behaviours in a variety of
3937 different contexts. For this thesis, I have examined male aggression towards other males
3938 and towards females and have also examined male persistence under the same contexts.

3939 Particularly in the study of male sexual aggression towards females, we can see how
3940 persistence and aggression tie together to allow more sexually aggressive and persistent
3941 males to have higher forced copulation success. Overall, this research has broadened our
3942 understanding of the ways in which flies can use persistent and aggressive behavioural
3943 patterns to obtain and secure resources and mates, paving the way for future work to
3944 examine these distinct scenarios more in-depth.

3945 **7.6 References**

3946

3947 Alcock, J. (1987). Male reproductive tactics in the Libellulid dragonfly *Paltothemis*
3948 *lineatipes*: Temporal partitioning of territories, *103*(1), 157–173.

3949 Arnqvist, G. (1992). Pre-copulatory fighting in a water strider: inter-sexual conflict or mate
3950 assessment? *Animal Behaviour*, *43*(4), 559–567. [https://doi.org/10.1016/S0003-](https://doi.org/10.1016/S0003-3472(05)81016-4)
3951 [3472\(05\)81016-4](https://doi.org/10.1016/S0003-3472(05)81016-4)

3952 Arnqvist, G., & Rowe, L. (2005). *Sexual Conflict*. (J. R. Krebs & T. H. Clutton-Brock,
3953 Eds.). Princeton, New Jersey: Princeton University Press.

3954 Bastock, M., & Manning, A. (1955). The courtship of *Drosophila melanogaster*.
3955 *Behaviour*, *8*(2), 85–111.

3956 Bath, E., Bowden, S., Peters, C., Reddy, A., Tobias, J. A., Easton-Calabria, E., ... Wigby,
3957 S. (2017). Sperm and sex peptide stimulate aggression in female *Drosophila*. *Nature*
3958 *Ecology and Evolution*, *1*(6), 1–6. <https://doi.org/10.1038/s41559-017-0154>

3959 Borgia, G., & Gore, M. A. (1986). Feather stealing in the satin bowerbird (*Ptilonorhynchus*
3960 *violaceus*): male competition and the quality of display. *Animal Behaviour*, *34*(3),
3961 727–738. [https://doi.org/10.1016/S0003-3472\(86\)80056-2](https://doi.org/10.1016/S0003-3472(86)80056-2)

3962 Byrne, P. G., Rice, G. R., & Rice, W. R. (2008). Effect of a refuge from persistent male
3963 courtship in the *Drosophila* laboratory environment. *Integrative and*
3964 *Comparative Biology*, *48*(2), 1–7. <https://doi.org/10.1093/icb/icn001>

3965 Chen, S., Lee, A. Y., Bowens, N. M., Huber, R., & Kravitz, E. A. (2002). Fighting fruit
3966 flies: a model system for the study of aggression. *Proceedings of the National*
3967 *Academy of Sciences of the United States of America*, *99*(8), 5664–5668.
3968 <https://doi.org/10.1073/pnas.082102599>

3969 Clutton-Brock, T. H. (1982). The functions of antlers. *Behaviour*, *79*(2), 108–125.
3970 <https://doi.org/10.1007/s>

3971 Connolly, K., & Cook, R. (1973). Rejection responses by female *Drosophila*
3972 *melanogaster*: Their ontogeny, causality and effects upon the behaviour of the
3973 courting male. *Behaviour*, *44*(1), 142–166.

3974 Corcoran, A. J., & Conner, W. E. (2014). Bats jamming bats: Food competition through
3975 sonar interference. *Science*, *346*(6210), 745–747.
3976 <https://doi.org/10.1126/science.1259512>

3977 Davis, S. M., Thomas, A. L., Liu, L., Campbell, I. M., & Dierick, H. A. (2018). Isolation
3978 of aggressive behavior mutants in *Drosophila* using a screen for wing damage.
3979 *Genetics*, *208*(1), 273–282. <https://doi.org/10.1534/genetics.117.300292>

3980 Draud, M., Macías-Ordóñez, R., Verga, J., & Itzkowitz, M. (2004). Female and male Texas
3981 cichlids (*Herichthys cyanoguttatum*) do not fight by the same rules. *Behavioral*
3982 *Ecology*, *15*(1), 102–108. <https://doi.org/10.1093/beheco/arg081>

3983 Dukas, R., & Jongsma, K. (2012). Costs to females and benefits to males from forced
3984 copulations in fruit flies. *Animal Behaviour*, *84*, 1177–1182.

3985 Dukas, R., & Scott, A. M. (2015). Fruit fly courtship: The female perspective. *Current*
3986 *Zoology*, *61*(6), 1008–1014.

3987 Enquist, M., & Leimar, O. (1983). Evolution of fighting behaviour: Decision rules and
3988 assessment of relative strength. *Journal of Theoretical Biology*, *102*(3), 387–410.

- 3989 [https://doi.org/10.1016/0022-5193\(83\)90376-4](https://doi.org/10.1016/0022-5193(83)90376-4)
- 3990 Filice, D. C. S., & Long, T. A. F. (2017). Phenotypic plasticity in female mate choice
3991 behavior is mediated by an interaction of direct and indirect genetic effects in
3992 *Drosophila melanogaster*. *Ecology and Evolution*, 7(10), 3542–3551.
3993 <https://doi.org/10.1002/ece3.2954>
- 3994 Friberg, U., & Arnqvist, G. (2003). Fitness effects of female mate choice: preferred males
3995 are detrimental for *Drosophila melanogaster* females. *Journal of Evolutionary*
3996 *Biology*, 16(5), 797–811. Retrieved from
3997 <http://www.ncbi.nlm.nih.gov/pubmed/14635895>
- 3998 Frisell, T., Pawitan, Y., Långström, N., & Lichtenstein, P. (2012). Heritability, assortative
3999 mating and gender differences in violent crime: Results from a total population sample
4000 using twin, adoption, and sibling models. *Behavior Genetics*, 42(1), 3–18.
4001 <https://doi.org/10.1007/s10519-011-9483-0>
- 4002 Greig-Smith, P. W. (1987). Persistence in foraging: When do bullfinches abandon
4003 unprofitable seeds? *Behaviour*, 103(1), 203–216.
- 4004 Hoffmann, A. A. (1987). A laboratory study of male territoriality in the sibling species
4005 *Drosophila melanogaster* and *D. simulans*. *Animal Behaviour*, 35, 807–818.
- 4006 Horne, E. A., & Itzkowitz, M. (1995). Behaviour of the female beaugregory damselfish
4007 (*Stegastes leucostictus*). *Journal of Fish Biology*, 46(3), 457–461.
4008 <https://doi.org/10.1111/j.1095-8649.1995.tb05986.x>
- 4009 Jacobs, L. F. (1992). The effect of handling time on the decision to cache by grey squirrels.
4010 *Animal Behaviour*, 43(3), 522–524. [https://doi.org/10.1016/S0003-3472\(05\)80111-3](https://doi.org/10.1016/S0003-3472(05)80111-3)
- 4011 Kemp, D. J. (2006). Ageing, reproductive value, and the evolution of lifetime fighting
4012 behaviour. *Biological Journal of the Linnean Society*, 88, 565–578.
- 4013 Kumano, N., Kuriwada, T., Shiromoto, K., Haraguchi, D., & Kohama, T. (2011). Intensive
4014 resistance by females before copulation induces insemination failure in the West
4015 Indian sweet potato weevil *Euscepes postfasciatus*. *Population Ecology*, 53(1), 111–
4016 117. <https://doi.org/10.1007/s10144-010-0217-6>
- 4017 Leimar, O., Austad, S., & Enquist, M. (1991). A test of the sequential assessment game:
4018 Fighting in the bowl and doily spider *Frontinella pyramitela*. *Evolution*, 45(4), 862–
4019 874. <https://doi.org/10.2307/2409694>
- 4020 Long, C. E., Markow, T. A., & Yaeger, P. (1980). Relative male age, fertility, and
4021 competitive mating success in *Drosophila melanogaster*. *Behavior Genetics*, 10(2),
4022 163–170. Retrieved from
4023 <http://www.springerlink.com/index/FXP7561885513246.pdf>
- 4024 Mackay, T. F. C., Richards, S., Stone, E. A., Barbadilla, A., Ayroles, J. F., Zhu, D., ...
4025 Gibbs, R. A. (2012). The *Drosophila melanogaster* Genetic Reference Panel. *Nature*,
4026 482(7384), 173–178. <https://doi.org/10.1038/nature10811>
- 4027 Marden, J. H., & Cobb, J. R. (2004). Territorial and mating success of dragonflies that vary
4028 in muscle power output and presence of gregarine gut parasites. *Animal Behaviour*,
4029 68(4), 857–865. <https://doi.org/10.1016/j.anbehav.2003.09.019>
- 4030 Markow, T. A., Quaid, M., & Kerr, S. (1978). Male mating experience and competitive
4031 courtship success in *Drosophila melanogaster*. *Nature*, 276, 821–822. Retrieved from
4032 <http://psycnet.apa.org/psycinfo/1980-09004-001>

- 4033 Nilsen, S. P., Chan, Y.-B., Huber, R., & Kravitz, E. A. (2004). Gender-selective patterns
4034 of aggressive behavior in *Drosophila melanogaster*. *Proceedings of the Royal Society*
4035 *of London Series B, Containing Papers of a Biological Character Royal Society*
4036 *(Great Britain)*, 101(33), 12342–12347. <https://doi.org/10.1073/pnas.0404693101>
- 4037 Niv, S., Tuvblad, C., Raine, A., & Baker, L. A. (2013). Aggression and rule-breaking:
4038 Heritability and stability of antisocial behavior problems in childhood and
4039 adolescence. *Journal of Criminal Justice*, 41(5), 285–291.
4040 <https://doi.org/10.1016/j.jcrimjus.2013.06.014>
- 4041 Olsson, M. (1995). Territoriality in Lake Eyre Dragons *Ctenophorus maculosus*: are Males
4042 ‘Superterritorial’? *Ethology*, 101(3), 222–227. [https://doi.org/10.1111/j.1439-](https://doi.org/10.1111/j.1439-0310.1995.tb00360.x)
4043 [0310.1995.tb00360.x](https://doi.org/10.1111/j.1439-0310.1995.tb00360.x)
- 4044 Parker, G. A. (1974). Assessment strategy and the evolution of fighting behaviour. *Journal*
4045 *of Theoretical Biology*, 47, 223–243.
- 4046 Qvarnström, A., & Forsgren, E. (1998). Should females prefer dominant males? *Trends in*
4047 *Ecology and Evolution*, 13(12), 498–501. [https://doi.org/10.1016/S0169-](https://doi.org/10.1016/S0169-5347(98)01513-4)
4048 [5347\(98\)01513-4](https://doi.org/10.1016/S0169-5347(98)01513-4)
- 4049 Saltz, J. B. (2013). Genetic composition of social groups influences male aggressive
4050 behaviour and fitness in natural genotypes of *Drosophila melanogaster*. *Proceedings*
4051 *of the Royal Society B: Biological Sciences*, 280(1771), 20131926–20131926.
4052 <https://doi.org/10.1098/rspb.2013.1926>
- 4053 Seeley, C., & Dukas, R. (2011). Teneral matings in fruit flies: Male coercion and female
4054 response. *Animal Behaviour*, 81(3), 595–601.
4055 <https://doi.org/10.1016/j.anbehav.2010.12.003>
- 4056 Shorter, J., Couch, C., Huang, W., Carbone, M. A., Peiffer, J., Anholt, R. R. H., & Mackay,
4057 T. F. C. (2015). Genetic architecture of natural variation in *Drosophila melanogaster*
4058 aggressive behavior. *Proceedings of the National Academy of Sciences*, 112(27),
4059 E3555–E3563. <https://doi.org/10.1073/pnas.1510104112>
- 4060 Somashekar, K., & Krishna, M. S. (2011). Evidence of female preference for older males
4061 in *Drosophila bipectinata*. *Zoological Studies*, 50(1), 1–15.
- 4062 Tuvblad, C., Grann, M., & Lichtenstein, P. (2006). Heritability for adolescent antisocial
4063 behavior differs with socioeconomic status: Gene-environment interaction. *Journal of*
4064 *Child Psychology and Psychiatry and Allied Disciplines*, 47(7), 734–743.
4065 <https://doi.org/10.1111/j.1469-7610.2005.01552.x>
- 4066 Ueda, A., & Kidokoro, Y. (2002). Aggressive behaviours of female *Drosophila*
4067 *melanogaster* are influenced by their social experience and food resources.
4068 *Physiological Entomology*, 27(1), 21–28. [https://doi.org/10.1046/j.1365-](https://doi.org/10.1046/j.1365-3032.2002.00262.x)
4069 [3032.2002.00262.x](https://doi.org/10.1046/j.1365-3032.2002.00262.x)
- 4070 Wang, S., & Sokolowski, M. B. (2017). Aggressive behaviours, food deprivation and the
4071 *foraging* gene. *Royal Society Open Science*, 4(4), 170042.
4072 <https://doi.org/10.1098/rsos.170042>
- 4073 Wigby, S., & Chapman, T. (2004). Female resistance to male harm evolves in response to
4074 manipulation of sexual conflict. *Evolution*, 58(5), 1028–1037.
- 4075 Yuan, Q., Song, Y., Yang, C.-H., Jan, L. Y., & Jan, Y. N. (2014). Female contact modulates
4076 male aggression via a sexually dimorphic GABAergic circuit in *Drosophila*. *Nature*

4077
4078

Neuroscience, 17(1), 81–88. <https://doi.org/10.1038/nn.3581>